





*Bequeathed*  
~~Presented~~ to

**The Library**

of the

**University of Toronto**

by

*Prof. W. S. Milner*







# THE POETICAL WORKS

OF

## ROBERT BROWNING

M.A.

HONORARY FELLOW OF BALLIOL COLLEGE, OXFORD

VOL. III.

*KING VICTOR AND KING CHARLES*  
*DRAMATIC LYRICS*  
*THE RETURN OF THE DRUSES*

263747  
—  
25 · 1 · 32

LONDON

SMITH, ELDER, & CO., 15 WATERLOO PLACE

1886

PR  
4200  
E84  
v.3  
cop. 2

## CONTENTS.

---

	PAGE
KING VICTOR AND KING CHARLES .....	1
DRAMATIC LYRICS .....	73
THE RETURN OF THE DRUSES .....	229





# KING VICTOR & KING CHARLES.

## A TRAGEDY.

---

So far as I know, this Tragedy is the first artistic consequence of what Voltaire termed “a terrible event without consequences;” and although it professes to be historical, I have taken more pains to arrive at the history than most readers would thank me for particularizing: since acquainted, as I will hope them to be, with the chief circumstances of Victor’s remarkable European career—nor quite ignorant of the sad and surprising facts I am about to reproduce (a tolerable account of which is to be found, for instance, in Abbé Roman’s *Récit*, or even the fifth of Lord Orrery’s Letters from Italy)—I cannot expect them to be versed, nor desirous of becoming so, in all the detail of the memoirs, correspondence, and relations of the time. From these only may be obtained a knowledge of the fiery and audacious temper, unscrupulous selfishness, profound dissimulation, and singular fertility in resources, of Victor—the extreme and painful sensibility, prolonged immaturity of powers, earnest good purpose and vacillating will of Charles—the noble and right woman’s manliness of his wife—and the ill-considered rascality and subsequent better-advised rectitude of D’Ormea. When I say, therefore, that I cannot but believe my statement combining as it does what appears correct in Voltaire and plausible in Condorcet) more true to person and thing than any it has hitherto been my fortune to meet with, no doubt my word will be aken, and my evidence spared as readily.—*R. B.*

*London, 1842.*

**PERSONS.**

**VICTOR AMADEUS**, First King of Sardinia.

**CHARLES EMMANUEL**, his Son, Prince of Piedmont.

**POLYXENA**, Wife of Charles.

**D'ORMEA**, Minister.

---

**SCENE.**—The Council Chamber of Rivoli Palace, near Turin communicating with a Hall at the back, an Apartment to the left and another to the right of the stage.

**TIME**, 1730-1.

# KING VICTOR & KING CHARLES.

---

FIRST YEAR, 1730.—KING VICTOR.

PART I.

CHARLES, POLYXENA.

*Cha.* You think so? Well, I do not.

*Pol.* My beloved,

All must clear up ; we shall be happy yet :

This cannot last for ever—oh, may change

To-day or any day !

*Cha.* —May change? Ah yes—  
May change !

*Pol.* Endure it, then.

*Cha.* No doubt, a life  
Like this drags on, now better and now worse.  
My father may . . . may take to loving me ;  
And he may take D'Ormea closer yet  
To counsel him ;—may even cast off her  
—That bad Sebastian ; but he also may  
. . . Or no, Polyxena, my only friend,  
He may not force you from me ?

*Pol.* Now, force me  
 From you!—me, close by you as if there gloomed  
 No Sebastians, no D'Ormeas on our path—  
 At Rivoli or Turin, still at hand,  
 Arch-counsellor, prime confidant . . . force me!

*Cha.* Because I felt as sure, as I feel sure  
 We clasp hands now, of being happy once.  
 Young was I, quite neglected, nor concerned  
 By the world's business that engrossed so much  
 My father and my brother: if I peered  
 From out my privacy,—amid the crash  
 And blaze of nations, domineered those two.  
 'T was war, peace—France our foe, now—England,  
 friend—

In love with Spain—at feud with Austria! Well—  
 I wondered, laughed a moment's laugh for pride  
 In the chivalrous couple, then let drop  
 My curtain—"I am out of it," I said—  
 When . . .

*Pol.* You have told me, Charles!

*Cha.* Polyxena—

When suddenly,—a warm March day, just that!  
 Just so much sunshine as the cottage child  
 Basks in delighted, while the cottager  
 Takes off his bonnet, as he ceases work,  
 To catch the more of it—and it must fall  
 Heavily on my brother! Had you seen  
 Philip—the lion-featured! not like me!

*Pol.* I know—

*Cha.* And Philip's mouth yet fast to mine,  
His dead cheek on my cheek, his arm still round  
My neck,—they bade me rise, “for I was heir  
To the Duke,” they said, “the right hand of the Duke :”  
Till then he was my father, not the Duke !  
So . . let me finish . . the whole intricate  
World's-business their dead boy was born to, I  
Must conquer,—ay, the brilliant thing he was,  
I, of a sudden must be : my faults, my follies,  
—All bitter truths were told me, all at once,  
To end the sooner. What I simply styled  
Their overlooking me, had been contempt :  
How should the Duke employ himself, forsooth,  
With such an one, while lordly Philip rode  
By him their Turin through ? But he was punished,  
And must put up with—me ! 'T was sad enough  
To learn my future portion and submit.  
And then the wear and worry, blame on blame !  
For, spring-sounds in my ears, spring-smells about,  
How could I but grow dizzy in their pent  
Dim palace-rooms at first ? My mother's look  
As they discussed my insignificance,  
She and my father, and I sitting by,—  
I bore ; I knew how brave a son they missed ;  
Philip had gaily run state-papers through,  
While Charles was spelling at them painfully !  
But Victor was my father spite of that.  
“ Duke Victor's entire life has been,” I said,  
“ Innumerable efforts to one end ;

“ And on the point now of that end’s success,  
 “ Our Ducal turning to a Kingly crown,  
 “ Where ’s time to be reminded ’t is his child  
 “ He spurns ? ” And so I suffered—scarcely suffered  
 Since I had you at length !

*Pol.* —To serve in place  
 Of monarch, minister and mistress, Charles !

*Cha.* But, once that crown obtained, then was ’t not like  
 Our lot would alter ? “ When he rests, takes breath,  
 “ Glances around, and sees who ’s left to love—  
 “ Now that my mother ’s dead, sees I am left—  
 “ Is it not like he ’ll love me at the last ? ”  
 Well, Savoy turns Sardinia ; the Duke ’s King :  
 Could I—precisely then—could you expect  
 His harshness to redouble ? These few months  
 Have been . . have been . . Polyxena, do you  
 And God conduct me, or I lose myself !  
 What would he have ? What is ’t they want with me ?  
 Him with this mistress and this minister,  
 —You see me and you hear him ; judge us both !  
 Pronounce what I should do, Polyxena !

*Pol.* Endure, endure, beloved ! Say you not  
 He is your father ? All ’s so incident  
 To novel sway ! Beside, our life must change :  
 Or you ’ll acquire his kingcraft, or he ’ll find  
 Harshness a sorry way of teaching it.  
 I bear this—not that there ’s so much to bear.

*Cha.* You bear ? Do no’ I know that you, tho’ bound  
 To silence for my sake, are perishing

Piecemeal beside me? And how otherwise  
 When every creephole from the hideous Court  
 Is stopped; the Minister to dog me, here—  
 The Mistress posted to entrap you, there?  
 And thus shall we grow old in such a life;  
 Not careless, never estranged,—but old: to alter  
 Our life, there is so much to alter!

*Pol.*

Come—

Is it agreed that we forego complaint  
 Even at Turin, yet complain we here  
 At Rivoli? 'T were wiser you announced  
 Our presence to the King. What's now afoot  
 I wonder?—Not that any more's to dread  
 Than every day's embarrassment: but guess  
 For me, why train so fast succeeded train  
 On the high-road, each gayer still than each!  
 I noticed your Archbishop's pursuivant,  
 The sable cloak and silver cross; such pomp  
 Bodes . . . what now, Charles? Can you conceive?

*Cha.*

Not I.

*Pol.* A matter of some moment—

*Cha.*

There's our life!

Which of the group of loiterers that stare  
 From the lime-avenue, divines that I—  
 About to figure presently, he thinks,  
 In face of all assembled—am the one  
 Who knows precisely least about it?

*Pol.*

Tush!

D'Ormea's contrivance!





Head sunk on hand, devoured by slow chagrins  
 —Then radiant, for a crown had all at once  
 Seemed possible again ! I can behold  
 Him, whose least whisper ties my spirit fast,  
 In this sweet brow, nought could divert me from  
 Save objects like Sebastian's shameless lip,  
 Or worse, the clipped grey hair and dead white face  
 And dwindling eye as if it ached with guile,  
 D'Ormea wears . . .

*[As he kisses her, enter from the KING's apartment D'ORMEA.]*

I said he would divert  
 My kisses from your brow !

*D'O.* *[Aside.]* Here ! So, King Victor  
 Spoke truth for once : and who 's ordained, but I  
 To make that memorable ? Both in call,  
 As he declared ! Were 't better gnash the teeth,  
 Or laugh outright now ?

*Cha.* *[to POL.]* What 's his visit for ?

*D'O.* *[Aside.]* I question if they even speak to me.

*Pol.* *[to CHA.]* Face the man ! He 'll suppose you  
 fear him, else.

*[Aloud.]* The Marquis bears the King's command, no  
 doubt ?

*D'O.* *[Aside.]* Precisely !—If I threatened him,  
 perhaps ?

Well, this at least is punishment enough !

Men used to promise punishment would come.

*Cha.* Deliver the King's message, Marquis—

*D'O.* *[Aside.]*

Ah—

So anxious for his fate? [*Aloud.*] A word, my Prince,  
Before you see your father—just one word  
Of counsel!

*Cha.* Oh, your counsel certainly!  
Polyxena, the Marquis counsels us!  
Well, sir? Be brief, however!

*D'O.* What? You know  
As much as I?—preceded me, most like,  
In knowledge! So! ('T is in his eye, beside—  
His voice: he knows it, and his heart's on flame  
Already!) You surmise why you, myself,  
Del Borgo, Spava, fifty nobles more,  
Are summoned thus?

*Cha.* Is the Prince used to know,  
At any time, the pleasure of the King,  
Before his minister?—Polyxena,  
Stay here till I conclude my task: I feel  
Your presence (smile not) through the walls, and take  
Fresh heart. The King's within that chamber?

*D'O.* [*Passing the table whereon a paper lies, exclaims, as he  
glances at it,* "Spain!"

*Pol.* [*Aside to Cha.*] Tarry awhile: what ails the  
minister?

*D'O.* Madam, I do not often trouble you.  
The Prince loathes, and you loathe me—let that pass!  
But since it touches him and you, not me,  
Bid the Prince listen!

*Pol.* [*to CHA.*] Surely you will listen  
—Deceit?—Those fingers crumpling up his vest?

*Cha.* Deceitful to the very fingers' ends !

*D'O.* [*who has approached them, overlooks the other paper*  
*CHARLES continues to hold.*

My project for the Fiefs ! As I supposed !  
Sir, I must give you light upon those measures  
—For this is mine, and that I spied of Spain,  
Mine too !

*Cha.* Release me ! Do you gloze on me  
Who bear in the world's face (that is, the world  
You make for me at Turin) your contempt ?  
—Your measure ?—When was not any hateful task  
D'Ormea's imposition ? Leave my robe !  
What post can I bestow, what grant concede ?  
Or do you take me for the King ?

*D'O.*

Not I !

Not yet for King,—not for, as yet, thank God,  
One who in . . shall I say a year, a month ?  
Ay !—shall be wretcheder than e'er was slave  
In his Sardinia,—Europe's spectacle  
And the world's bye-word ! What ? The Prince  
aggrieved

That I excluded him our counsels ? Here

[*Touching the paper in CHARLES's hand.*

Accept a method of extorting gold  
From Savoy's nobles, who must wring its worth  
In silver first from tillers of the soil,  
Whose hinds again have to contribute brass  
To make up the amount : there 's counsel, sir  
My counsel, one year old ; and the fruit, this—

Savoy 's become a mass of misery  
And wrath, which one man has to meet—the King :  
You 're not the King ! Another counsel, sir !  
Spain entertains a project (here it lies)  
Which, guessed, makes Austria offer that same King  
Thus much to baffle Spain ; he promises ;  
Then comes Spain, breathless lest she be forestalled,  
Her offer follows ; and he promises . . .

*Cha.* —Promises, sir, when he before agreed  
To Austria's offer ?

*D'O.*                      That 's a counsel, Prince !  
But past our foresight, Spain and Austria (choosing  
To make their quarrel up between themselves  
Without the intervention of a friend)  
Produce both treaties, and both promises . . .

*Cha.* How ?

*D'O.*                      Prince, a counsel !—And the fruit of that ?  
Both parties covenant afresh, to fall  
Together on their friend, blot out his name,  
Abolish him from Europe. So, take note,  
Here 's Austria and here 's Spain to fight against,  
And what sustains the King but Savoy here,  
A miserable people mad with wrongs ?  
You 're not the King !

*Cha.*                      Polyxena, you said  
All would clear up : all does clear up to me !

*D'O.* Clear up ? 'T is no such thing to envy, then ?  
You see the King's state in its length and breadth ?  
You blame me now for keeping you aloof

From counsels and the fruit of counsels?—Wait  
Till I explain this morning's business!

*Cha.* [*Aside.*] No—

Stoop to my father, yes,—D'Ormea, no;  
—The King's son, not to the King's counsellor!  
I will do something, but at least retain  
The credit of my deed! [*Aloud.*] Then it is this  
You now expressly come to tell me?

*D'O.* This

To tell! You apprehend me?

*Cha.* Perfectly.

Further, D'Ormea, you have shown yourself,  
For the first time these many weeks and months,  
Disposed to do my bidding?

*D'O.* From the heart!

*Cha.* Acquaint my father, first, I wait his pleasure:  
Next . . . or, I'll tell you at a fitter time.  
Acquaint the King!

*D'O.* [*Aside.*] If I 'scape Victor yet!

First, to prevent this stroke at me: if not,—  
Then, to avenge it! [*To CHA.*] Gracious sir, I go. [*Goes.*]

*Cha.* God, I forbore! Which more offends, that man  
Or that man's master? Is it come to this?  
Have they supposed (the sharpest insult yet)  
I needed e'en his intervention? No!  
No—dull am I, conceded,—but so dull,  
Scarcely! Their step decides me.

*Pol.* How decides?

*Cha.* You would be freed D'Ormea's eye and hers?

—Could fly the court with me and live content?  
 So, this it is for which the knights assemble!  
 The whispers and the closeting of late,  
 The savageness and insolence of old,  
 —For this!

*Pol.*               What mean you?

*Cha.*                               How? You fail to catch  
 Their clever plot? I missed it, but could you?  
 These last two months of care to inculcate  
 How dull I am,—D'Ormea's present visit  
 To prove that, being dull, I might be worse  
 Were I a King—as wretched as now dull—  
 You recognise in it no winding up  
 Of a long plot?

*Pol.*                       Why should there be a plot?

*Cha.* The crown's secure now; I should shame the  
 crown—

An old complaint; the point is, how to gain  
 My place for one, more fit in Victor's eyes,  
 His mistress the Sebastian's child.

*Pol.*                               In truth?

*Cha.* They dare not quite dethrone Sardinia's Prince:  
 But they may descant on my dulness till  
 They sting me into even praying them  
 Grant leave to hide my head, resign my state,  
 And end the coil. Not see now? In a word,  
 They'd have me tender them myself my rights  
 As one incapable;—some cause for that,  
 Since I delayed thus long to see their drift!

I shall apprise the King he may resume  
My rights this moment.

*Pol.* Pause ! I dare not think  
So ill of Victor.

*Cha.* Think no ill of him !

*Pol.*—Nor think him, then, so shallow as to suffer  
His purpose be divined thus easily.  
And yet—you are the last of a great line ;  
There 's a great heritage at stake ; new days  
Seemed to await this newest of the realms  
Of Europe :—Charles, you must withstand this !

*Cha.*

Ah—

You dare not then renounce the splendid Court  
For one whom all the world despises ? Speak !

*Pol.* My gentle husband, speak I will, and truth.  
Were this as you believe, and I once sure  
Your duty lay in so renouncing rule,  
I could . . could ? Oh what happiness it were—  
To live, my Charles, and die, alone with you !

*Cha.* I grieve I asked you. To the presence, then !  
By this, D'Ormea acquaints the King, no doubt,  
He fears I am too simple for mere hints,  
And that no less will serve than Victor's mouth  
Demonstrating in council what I am.  
I have not breathed, I think, these many years !

*Pol.* Why, it may be !—if he desire to wed  
That woman, call legitimate her child.

*Cha.* You see as much ? Oh, let his will have way !  
You 'll not repent confiding in me, love ?

'There 's many a brighter spot in Piedmont, far,  
 Than Rivoli. I 'll seek him : or, suppose  
 You hear first how I mean to speak my mind ?  
 — Loudly and firmly both, this time, be sure !  
 I yet may see your Rhine-land, who can tell ?  
 Once away, ever then away ! I breathe.

*Pol.* And I too breathe.

*Cha.*

Come, my Polyxena !

#### KING VICTOR: PART II.

*Enter KING VICTOR, bearing the regalia on a cushion, from his apartment. He calls loudly.*

D'Ormea !—for patience fails me, treading thus  
 Among the obscure trains I have laid,—my knights  
 Safe in the hall here—in that anteroom,  
 My son,—D'Ormea, where ? Of this, one touch—

*[Laying down the crown.*

This fireball to these mute black cold trains—then  
 Outbreak enough !

*[Contemplating it.]* To lose all, after all !

This, glancing o'er my house for ages—shaped,  
 Brave meteor, like the crown of Cyprus now,  
 Jerusalem, Spain, England, every change  
 The braver,—and when I have clutched a prize  
 My ancestry died wan with watching for,  
 To lose it !—by a slip, a fault, a trick  
 Learnt to advantage once and not unlearned



When past the use,—“just this once more” (I thought)  
 “Use it with Spain and Austria happily,  
 “And then away with trick!” An oversigh.  
 I’d have repaired thrice over, any time  
 These fifty years, must happen now! There’s peace  
 At length; and I, to make the most of peace,  
 Ventured my project on our people here,  
 As needing not their help: which Europe knows,  
 And means, cold-blooded, to dispose herself  
 (Apart from plausibilities of war)  
 To crush the new-made King—who ne’er till now  
 Feared her. As Duke, I lost each foot of earth  
 And laughed at her: my name was left, my sword  
 Left, all was left! But she can take, she knows,  
 This crown, herself conceded . . .

That’s to try,

Kind Europe! My career’s not closed as yet!  
 This boy was ever subject to my will,  
 Timid and tame—the fitter! D’Ormea, too—  
 What if the sovereign also rid himself  
 Of thee, his prime of parasites?—I delay!  
 D’Ormea! [*As D’ORMEA enters, the King seats himself.*  
 My son, the Prince—attends he?

*D’O.* Sir,  
 He does attend. The crown prepared!—it seems  
 That you persist in your resolve.

*Vic.* Who’s come.  
 The chancellor and the chamberlain? My knights?  
*D’O.* The whole Annunziata.—If, my liege,

Your fortune had not tottered worse than now . . .

*Vic.* Del Borgo has drawn up the schedules? mine—  
My son's, too? Excellent! Only, beware  
Of the least blunder, or we look but fools.  
First, you read the Annulment of the Oaths;  
Del Borgo follows . . . no, the Prince shall sign;  
Then let Del Borgo read the Instrument:  
On which, I enter.

*D'O.* Sir, this may be truth;  
You, sir, may do as you affect—may break  
Your engine, me, to pieces: try at least  
If not a spring remain worth saving! Take  
My counsel as I've counselled many times!  
What if the Spaniard and the Austrian threat?  
There's England, Holland, Venice—which ally  
Select you?

*Vic.* Aha! Come, D'Ormea,—“truth”  
Was on your lip a minute since. Allies?  
I've broken faith with Venice, Holland, England  
—As who knows if not you?

*D'O.* But why with me  
Break faith—with one ally, your best, break faith?

*Vic.* When first I stumbled on you, Marquis—'t was  
At Mondovi—a little lawyer's clerk . . .

*D'O.* Therefore your soul's ally!—who brought you  
through  
Your quarrel with the Pope, at pains enough—  
Who simply echoed you in these affairs—  
On whom you cannot therefore visit these

Affairs' ill fortune—whom you trust to guide  
You safe (yes, on my soul) through these affairs !

*Vic.* I was about to notice, had you not  
Prevented me, that since that great town kept  
With its chicane D'Ormea's satchel stuffed  
And D'Ormea's self sufficiently recluse,  
He missed a sight.—my naval armament  
When I burned Toulon. How the skiff exults  
Upon the galliot's wave !—rises its height,  
O'ertops it even ; but the great wave bursts,  
And hell-deep in the horrible profound  
Buries itself the galliot : shall the skiff  
Think to escape the sea's black trough in turn ?  
Apply this : you have been my minister  
—Next me, above me possibly ;—sad post,  
Huge care, abundant lack of peace of mind ;  
Who would desiderate the eminence ?  
You gave your soul to get it ; you 'd yet give  
Your soul to keep it, as I mean you shall,  
D'Ormea ! What if the wave ebbed with me ?  
Whereas it cants you to another crest ;  
I toss you to my son ; ride out your ride !

*D'O.* Ah, you so much despise me ?

*Vic.*

You, D'Ormea ?

Nowise : and I 'll inform you why. A king  
Must in his time have many ministers,  
And I 've been rash enough to part with mine  
When I thought proper. Of the tribe, not one  
( . . Or wait, did Pianezze ? . . ah, just the same !)

Not one of them, ere his remonstrance reached  
 The length of yours, but has assured me (commonly  
 Standing much as you stand,—or nearer, say,  
 The door to make his exit on his speech)  
 —I should repent of what I did. D'Ormea,  
 Be candid, you approached it when I bade you  
 Prepare the schedules ! But you stopped in time,  
 You have not so assured me : how should I  
 Despise you then ?

*Enter CHARLES.*

*Vic. [changing his tone.]* Are you instructed ? Do  
 My order, point by point ! About it, sir !

*D'O.* You so despise me ! *[Aside.]* One last stay  
 remains—

The boy's discretion there.

*[To CHARLES.]* For your sake, Prince,  
 I pleaded, wholly in your interest,  
 To save you from this fate !

*Cha. [Aside.]* Must I be told  
 The Prince was supplicated for—by him ?

*Vic. [to D'O.]* Apprise Del Borgo, Spava and the rest,  
 Our son attends them ; then return.

*D'O.* One word !

*Cha. [Aside.]* A moment's pause and they would drive  
 me hence,

I do believe !

*D'O. [Aside.]* Let but the boy be firm !

*Vic.* You disobey ?

*Cha. [To D'O.]* You do not disobey

Me, at least? Did you promise that or no?

*D'O.* Sir, I am yours: what would you? Yours  
am I!

*Cha.* When I have said what I shall say, 't is like  
Your face will ne'er again disgust me. Go!  
Through you, as through a breast of glass, I see.  
And for your conduct, from my youth till now,  
Take my contempt! You might have spared me  
much,

Secured me somewhat, nor so harmed yourself:  
That 's over now. Go, ne'er to come again!

*D'O.* As son, the father—father as, the son!  
My wits! My wits! [Goes.

*Vic.* [*Seated.*] And you, what meant you, pray,  
Speaking thus to D'Ormea?

*Cha.* Let us not  
Weary ourselves with D'Ormea! Those few words  
Have half unsettled what I came to say.  
His presence vexes to my very soul.

*Vic.* One called to manage a kingdom, Charles, needs  
heart

To bear up under worse annoyances  
Than seems D'Ormea—to me, at least.

*Cha.* [*Aside.*] Ah, good!  
He keeps me to the point! Then be it so.

[*Aloud.*] Last night, sir, brought me certain papers—  
these—

To be reported on,—your way of late.  
Is it last night's result that you demand?

*Vic.* For God's sake, what has night brought forth?  
Pronounce

The . . what's your word?—result!

*Cha.* Sir, that had proved  
Quite worthy of your sneer, no doubt :—a few  
Lame thoughts, regard for you alone could wring,  
Lame as they are, from brains like mine, believe!  
As 't is, sir, I am spared both toil and sneer.  
These are the papers.

*Vic.* Well, sir? I suppose  
You hardly burned them. Now for your result!

*Cha.* I never should have done great things of  
course,  
But . . oh my father, had you loved me more!

*Vic.* Loved? [*Aside.*] Has D'Ormea played me false,  
I wonder?

[*Aloud.*] Why, Charles, a king's love is diffused—yourself  
May overlook, perchance, your part in it.

Our monarchy is absolutest now

In Europe, or my trouble's thrown away.

I love, my mode, that subjects each and all

May have the power of loving, all and each,

Their mode: I doubt not, many have their sons

To trifle with, talk soft to, all day long:

I have that crown, this chair, D'Ormea, Charles!

*Cha.* 'Tis well I am a subject then, not you.

*Vic.* [*Aside.*] D'Ormea has told him everything.

[*Aloud.*] Aha,

I apprehend you: when all's said, you take

Your private station to be prized beyond  
My own, for instance ?

*Cha.* —Do and ever did

So take it : 't is the method you pursue  
That grieves . . . .

*Vic.* These words ! Let me express, my friend,  
Your thoughts. You penetrate what I supposed  
Secret. D'Ormea plies his trade betimes !  
I purpose to resign my crown to you.

*Cha.* To me ?

*Vic.* Now in that chamber.

*Cha.* You resign

The crown to me ?

*Vic.* And time enough, Charles, sure ?  
Confess with me, at four-and-sixty years  
A crown 's a load. I covet quiet once  
Before I die, and summoned you for that.

*Cha.* 'T is I will speak : you ever hated me,  
I bore it,—have insulted me, borne too—  
Now you insult yourself ; and I remember  
What I believed you, what you really are,  
And cannot bear it. What ! My life has passed  
Under your eye, tormented as you know,—  
Your whole sagacities, one after one,  
At leisure brought to play on me—to prove me  
A fool, I thought and I submitted ; now  
You'd prove . . . what would you prove me ?

*Vic.* This to me ?

I hardly know you !

*Cha.* Know me? Oh indeed  
You do not! Wait till I complain next time  
Of my simplicity!—for here's a sage  
Knows the world well, is not to be deceived,  
And his experience and his Macchiavels,  
D'Ormeas, teach him—what?—that I this while  
Have envied him his crown! He has not smiled,  
I warrant,—has not eaten, drunk nor slept,  
For I was plotting with my Princess yonder!  
Who knows what we might do or might not do?  
Go now, be politic, astound the world!  
That sentry in the antechamber—nay,  
The varlet who disposed this precious trap

*[Pointing to the crown.]*

That was to take me—ask them if they think  
Their own sons envy them their posts!—Know me!

*Vic.* But you know me, it seems; so, learn in brief.  
My pleasure. This assembly is convened . . .

*Cha.* Tell me, that woman put it in your head!  
You were not sole contriver of the scheme,  
My father!

*Vic.* Now observe me, sir! I jest  
Seldom—on these points, never. Here, I say,  
The knights assemble to see me concede,  
And you accept, Sardinia's crown.

*Cha.* Farewell!  
'T were vain to hope to change this: I can end it.  
Not that I cease from being yours, when sunk  
Into obscurity: I'll die for you,



But not annoy you with my presence. Sir,  
Farewell ! Farewell !

*Enter D'ORMEA.*

*D'O.* [*Aside.*] Ha, sure he 's changed again—  
Means not to fall into the cunning trap !  
Then Victor, I shall yet escape you, Victor !

*Vic.* [*suddenly placing the crown upon the head of CHARLES.*  
D'Ormea, your King !

[*To CHARLES.*] My son, obey me ! Charles,  
Your father, clearer-sighted than yourself,  
Decides it must be so. 'Faith, this looks real !  
My reasons after ; reason upon reason  
After : but now, obey me ! Trust in me !  
By this, you save Sardinia, you save me !  
Why, the boy swoons ! [*To D'O.*] Come this side !

*D'O.* [*As CHARLES turns from him to VICTOR.*] You  
persist ?

*Vic.* Yes, I conceive the gesture's meaning. 'Faith,  
He almost seems to hate you : how is that ?  
Be re-assured, my Charles ! Is 't over now ?  
Then, Marquis, tell the new King what remains  
To do ! A moment's work. Del Borgo reads  
The Act of Abdication out, you sign it,  
Then I sign ; after that, come back to me.

*D'O.* Sir, for the last time, pause !

*Vic.* Five minutes longer  
I am your sovereign, Marquis. Hesitate—  
And I 'll so turn those minutes to account  
That . . . Ay, you recollect me ! [*Aside.*] Could I bring

My foolish mind to undergo the reading  
That Act of Abdication !

[As CHARLES motions D'ORMEA to precede him.

Thanks, dear Charles !

[CHARLES and D'ORMEA retire.

*Vic.* A novel feature in the boy,—indeed  
Just what I feared he wanted most. Quite right,  
This earnest tone : your truth, now, for effect !  
It answers every purpose : with that look,  
That voice,—I hear him : “ I began no treaty,”  
(He speaks to Spain,) “ nor ever dreamed of this  
“ You show me ; this I from my soul regret ;  
“ But if my father signed it, bid not me  
“ Dishonour him—who gave me all, beside : ”  
And, “ true,” says Spain, “ ’t were harsh to visit that  
“ Upon the Prince.” Then come the nobles trooping :  
“ I grieve at these exactions—I had cut  
“ This hand off ere impose them ; but shall I  
“ Undo my father’s deed ? ”—and they confer :  
“ Doubtless he was no party, after all ;  
“ Give the Prince time ! ”

Ay, give us time, but time !

Only, he must not, when the dark day comes,  
Refer our friends to me and frustrate all.  
We ’ll have no child’s play, no desponding fits,  
No Charles at each cross turn entreating Victor  
To take his crown again. Guard against that !

*Enter D'ORMEA.*

Long live King Charles !

No—Charles's counsellor !

Well, is it over, Marquis ? Did I jest ?

*D'O.* “ King Charles ! ” What then may you be ?

*Vic.* Anything !

A country gentleman that, cured of bustle,  
Now beats a quick retreat toward Chambery,  
Would hunt and hawk and leave you noisy folk  
To drive your trade without him. I'm Count Remont—  
Count Tende—any little place's Count !

*D'O.* Then Victor, Captain against Catinat  
At Staffarde, where the French beat you ; and Duke  
At Turin, where you beat the French ; King late  
Of Savoy, Piedmont, Montferrat, Sardinia,  
—Now, “ any little place's Count ”—

*Vic.* Proceed !

*D'O.* Breaker of vows to God, who crowned you first ;  
Breaker of vows to man, who kept you since ;  
Most profligate to me who outraged God  
And man to serve you, and am made pay crimes  
I was but privy to, by passing thus  
To your imbecile son—who, well you know,  
Must—(when the people here, and nations there,  
Clamour for you the main delinquent, slipped  
From King to—“ Count of any little place ”)  
Must needs surrender me, all in his reach,—  
I, sir, forgive you : for I see the end—  
See you on your return—(you will return)—  
To him you trust thus for the moment . .

*Vic.*

Trust him ? How ?

My poor man, merely a prime-minister,  
Make me know where my trust errs !

*D'O.*

In his fear,

His love, his—but discover for yourself  
What you are weakest, trusting in !

*Vic.*

Aha,

D'Ormea, not a shrewder scheme than this  
In your repertory ? You know old Victor—  
Vain, choleric, inconstant, rash—(I 've heard  
Talkers who little thought the King so close)  
Felicitous now, were 't not, to provoke him  
To clean forget, one minute afterward,  
His solemn act, and call the nobles back  
And pray them give again the very power  
He has abjured ?—for the dear sake of what ?  
Vengeance on you, D'Ormea ! No : such am I,  
Count Tende or Count anything you please,  
—Only, the same that did the things you say,  
And, among other things you say not, used  
Your finest fibre, meanest muscle,—you  
I used, and now, since you will have it so,  
Leave to your fate—mere lumber in the midst,  
You and your works. Why, what on earth beside  
Are you made for, you sort of ministers ?

*D'O.* Not left, though, to my fate ! Your witless  
son

Has more wit than to load himself with lumber :  
He foils you that way, and I follow you.

*Vic.* Stay with my son—protect the weaker side !

*D'O.* Ay, to be tossed the people like a rag,  
And flung by them for Spain and Austria's sport,  
Abolishing the record of your part  
In all this perfidy !

*Vic.* Prevent, beside,  
My own return !

*D'O.* That 's half prevented now !  
'T will go hard but you find a wondrous charm  
In exile, to discredit me. The Alps,  
Silk-mills to watch, vines asking vigilance—  
Hounds open for the stag, your hawk 's a-wing—  
Brave days that wait the Louis of the South,  
Italy's Janus !

*Vic.* So, the lawyer's clerk  
Won't tell me that I shall repent !

*D'O.* You give me  
Full leave to ask if you repent ?

*Vic.* Whene'er  
Sufficient time elapse for that, you judge !

[*Shouts inside* "KING CHARLES."

*D'O.* Do you repent ?

*Vic.* [*after a slight pause.*] . . . I 've kept them waiting ?  
Yes !

Come in, complete the Abdication, sir ! [*They go out.*

*Enter POLYXENA.*

*Pol.* A shout ! The sycophants are free of Charles !  
O is not this like Italy ? No fruit  
Of his or my distempered fancy, this,  
But just an ordinary fact ! Beside,

Here they 've set forms for such proceedings ; Victor  
 Imprisoned his own mother : he should know,  
 If any, how a son 's to be deprived  
 Of a son's right. Our duty 's palpable.  
 Ne'er was my husband for the wily king  
 And the unworthy subjects : be it so !  
 Come you safe out of them, my Charles ! Our life  
 Grows not the broad and dazzling life, I dreamed  
 Might prove your lot ; for strength was shut in you  
 None guessed but I—strength which, untrammelled once,  
 Had little shamed your vaunted ancestry—  
 Patience and self-devotion, fortitude,  
 Simplicity and utter truthfulness  
 —All which, they shout to lose !

So, now my work

Begins—to save him from regret. Save Charles  
 Regret?—the noble nature ! He 's not made  
 Like these Italians : 't is a German soul.

*CHARLES enters crowned.*

Oh, where's the King's heir ? Gone :—the Crown-  
 prince ? Gone :—  
 Where 's Savoy ? Gone :—Sardinia ? Gone ! But  
 Charles  
 Is left ! And when my Rhine-land bowers arrive,  
 If he looked almost handsome yester-twilight  
 As his grey eyes seemed widening into black  
 Because I praised him, then how will he look ?  
 Farewell, you stripped and whited mulberry-trees  
 Bound each to each by lazy ropes of vine !

Now I 'll teach you my language : I 'm not forced  
To speak Italian now, Charles?

[*She sees the crown.*]                      What is this?

Answer me—who has done this?    Answer!

*Cha.*

He!

I am King now.

*Pol.*

Oh worst, worst, worst of all!

Tell me! What, Victor? He has made you King?

What 's he then? What 's to follow this? You, King?

*Cha.* Have I done wrong? Yes, for you were not by!

*Pol.* Tell me from first to last.

*Cha.*

Hush—a new world

Brightens before me ; he is moved away

—The dark form that eclipsed it, he subsides

Into a shape supporting me like you,

And I, alone, tend upward, more and more

Tend upward : I am grown Sardinia's King.

*Pol.* Now stop : was not this Victor, Duke of Savoy  
At ten years old?

*Cha.*

He was.

*Pol.*

And the Duke spent

Since then, just four-and-fifty years in toil

To be—what?

*Cha.*

King.

*Pol.*

Then why unking himself?

*Cha.* Those years are cause enough.

*Pol.*

The only cause?

*Cha.* Some new perplexities.

*Pol.*

Which you can solve

Although he cannot ?

*Cha.* He assures me so.

*Pol.* And this he means shall last—how long ?

*Cha.* How long ?

Think you I fear the perils I confront ?

He 's praising me before the people's face—

My people !

*Pol.* Then he 's changed—grown kind, the King ?  
Where can the trap be ?

*Cha.* Heart and soul I pledge !  
My father, could I guard the crown you gained,  
Transmit as I received it,—all good else  
Would I surrender !

*Pol.* Ah, it opens then  
Before you, all you dreaded formerly ?  
You are rejoiced to be a king, my Charles ?

*Cha.* So much to dare ? The better ;—much to dread ?  
The better. I 'll adventure though alone.  
Triumph or die, there 's Victor still to witness  
Who dies or triumphs—either way, alone !

*Pol.* Once I had found my share in triumph, Charles,  
Or death.

*Cha.* But you are I ! But you I call  
To take, Heaven's proxy, vows I tendered Heaven  
A moment since. I will deserve the crown !

*Pol.* You will. [*Aside.*] No doubt it were a glorious  
thing  
For any people, if a heart like his  
Ruled over it. I would I saw the trap.



*Enter VICTOR.*

'T is he must show me.

*Vic.*

So, the mask falls off

An old man's foolish love at last. Spare thanks !

I know you, and Polyxena I know.

Here 's Charles—I am his guest now—does he bid me

Be seated? And my light-haired blue-eyed child

Must not forget the old man far away

At Chambéry, who dozes while she reigns.

*Pol.* Most grateful shall we now be, talking least

Of gratitude—indeed of anything

That hinders what yourself must need to say

To Charles.

*Cha.*

Pray speak, sir !

*Vic.*

'Faith, not much to say :

Only what shows itself, you once i' the point

Of sight. You 're now the King : you 'll comprehend

Much you may oft have wondered at—the shifts,

Dissimulation, wiliness I showed.

For what 's our post? Here 's Savoy and here 's

Piedmont,

Here 's Montferrat—a breadth here, a space there—

To o'er-sweep all these, what 's one weapon worth ?

I often think of how they fought in Greece

(Or Rome, which was it? You 're the scholar, Charles !)

You made a front-thrust? But if your shield too

Were not adroitly planted, some shrewd knave

Reached you behind ; and him foiled, straight if thong

And handle of that shield were not cast loose,

And you enabled to outstrip the wind,  
Fresh foes assailed you, either side ; 'scape these,  
And reach your place of refuge—e'en then, odds  
If the gate opened unless breath, enough  
Were left in you to make its lord a speech.  
Oh, you will see !

*Cha.* No : straight on shall I go,  
'Truth helping ; win with it or die with it.

*Vic.* 'Faith, Charles, you're not made Europe's  
fighting-man !

The barrier-guarder, if you please. You clutch  
Hold and consolidate, with envious France  
'This side, with Austria that, the territory  
I held—ay, and will hold . . . which *you* shall hold  
Despite the couple ! But I've surely earned  
Exemption from these weary politics,  
—The privilege to prattle with my son  
And daughter here, tho' Europe wait the while.

*Pol.* Nay, sir,—at Chambery, away for ever,  
As soon you will be, 't is farewell we bid you :  
Turn these few fleeting moments to account !  
'T is just as though it were a death.

*Vic.* Indeed !

*Pol.* [*Aside.*] Is the trap there ?

*Cha.* Ay, call this parting—death !  
The sacreder your memory becomes.  
If I misrule Sardinia, how bring back  
My father ?

*Vic.* I mean . . .

*Pol.* [*who watches VICTOR narrowly this while.*]

Your father does not mean  
You should be ruling for your father's sake :  
It is your people must concern you wholly  
Instead of him. You mean this, sir? (He drops  
My hand !)

*Cha.* That people is now part of me.

*Vic.* About the people ! I took certain measures  
Some short time since . . Oh, I know well, you know  
But little of my measures ! These affect  
The nobles ; we 've resumed some grants, imposed  
A tax or two : prepare yourself, in short,  
For clamour on that score. Mark me : you yield  
No jot of aught entrusted you !

*Pol.* No jot  
You yield !

*Cha.* My father, when I took the oath,  
Although my eye might stray in search of yours  
I heard it, understood it, promised God  
What you require. Till from this eminence  
He move me, here I keep, nor shall concede  
The meanest of my rights.

*Vic.* [*Aside.*] The boy's a fool !  
—Or rather, I'm a fool : for, what's wrong here ?  
To-day the sweets of reigning : let to-morrow  
Be ready with its bitters.

*Enter D'ORMEA.*

There's beside  
Somewhat to press upon your notice first.

*Cha.* Then why delay it for an instant, sir?  
That Spanish claim perchance? And, now you speak,  
—This morning, my opinion was mature,  
Which, boy-like, I was bashful in producing  
To one I ne'er am like to fear in future!  
My thought is formed upon that Spanish claim.

*Vic.* Betimes indeed. Not now, Charles! You require  
A host of papers on it.

*D'O.* [*coming forward.*] Here they are.  
[*To CHA.*] I was the minister and much beside  
Of the late monarch; to say little, him  
I served: on you I have, to say e'en less,  
No claim. This case contains those papers: with them  
I tender you my office.

*Vic.* [*hastily.*] Keep him, Charles!  
There's reason for it—many reasons: you  
Distrust him, nor are so far wrong there,—but  
He's mixed up in this matter—he'll desire  
To quit you, for occasions known to me:  
Do not accept those reasons: have him stay!

*Pol.* [*Aside.*] His minister thrust on us!

*Cha.* [*to D'ORMEA.*] Sir, believe,

In justice to myself, you do not need  
E'en this commending: howsoe'er might seem  
My feelings toward you, as a private man,  
They quit me in the vast and untried field  
Of action. Though I shall myself (as late  
In your own hearing I engaged to do)  
Preside o'er my Sardinia, yet your help

Is necessary. Think the past forgotten

And serve me now !

*D'O.* I did not offer you

My service—would that I could serve you, sir !

As for the Spanish matter . . .

*Vic.* But dispatch

At least the dead, in my good daughter's phrase,

Before the living ! Help to house me safe

Ere with D'Ormea you set the world a-gape !

Here is a paper—will you overlook

What I propose reserving for my needs ?

I get as far from you as possible :

Here's what I reckon my expenditure.

*Cha.* [*reading.*] A miserable fifty thousand crowns !

*Vic.* Oh quite enough for country gentlemen !

Beside the exchequer happens . . . but find out

All that, yourself !

*Cha.* [*still reading.*] "Count Tende"—what means this ?

*Vic.* Me : you were but an infant when I burst

Through the defile of Tende upon France.

Had only my allies kept true to me !

No matter. Tende's, then, a name I take

Just as . . .

*D'O.* —The Marchioness Sebastian takes

The name of Spigno.

*Cha.* How, sir ?

*Vic.* [*to D'ORMEA.*] Fool ! All that

Was for my own detailing. [*To CHARLES.*] That anon !

*Cha.* [*to D'ORMEA.*] Explain what you have said, sir !

*D'O.*

I supposed

The marriage of the King to her I named,  
 Profoundly kept a secret these few weeks,  
 Was not to be one, now he 's Count.

*Pol.* [*Aside.*]

With us

The minister—with him the mistress !

*Cha.* [*to VICTOR.*]

No—

Tell me you have not taken her—that woman  
 To live with, past recall !

*Vic.*

And where 's the crime . . .

*Pol.* [*to CHARLES.*] True, sir, this is a matter past  
 recall

And past your cognizance. A day before,  
 And you had been compelled to note this—now  
 Why note it? The King saved his House from  
 shame :

What the Count did, is no concern of yours.

*Cha.* [*after a pause.*] The Spanish claim, D'Ormea !

*Vic.*

Why, my son,

I took some ill-advised . . . one's age, in fact,  
 Spoils everything : though I was over-reached,  
 A younger brain, we 'll trust, may extricate  
 Sardinia readily. To-morrow, D'Ormea,  
 Inform the King !

*D'O.* [*without regarding VICTOR, and leisurely.*]

Thus stands the case with Spain :

When first the Infant Carlos claimed his proper  
 Succession to the throne of Tuscany . . .

*Vic.* I tell you that stands over ! Let that rest !  
There is the policy !

*Cha.* [*to D'ORMEA.*] Thus much I know,  
And more—too much : the remedy ?

*D'O.* Of course !  
No glimpse of one.

*Vic.* No remedy at all !  
It makes the remedy itself—time makes it.

*D'O.* [*to CHARLES.*] But if . . .

*Vic.* [*still more hastily.*] In fine, I shall take care of  
that :

And, with another project that I have . . .

*D'O.* [*turning on him.*] Oh, since Count Tende means  
to take again

King Victor's crown !—

*Pol.* [*throwing herself at VICTOR'S feet.*] E'en now  
retake it, sir !

Oh, speak ! We are your subjects both, once  
more !

Say it—a word effects it ! You meant **not**,  
Nor do mean now, to take it : but you must !  
'T is in you—in your nature—and the shame 's  
Not half the shame 't would grow to afterwards !

*Cha.* Polyxena !

*Pol.* A word recalls the knights—  
Say it !—What 's promising and what 's the past ?  
Say you are still King Victor !

*D'O.* Better say  
The Count repents, in brief ! [*VICTOR rises.*]

*Cha.* With such a crime  
I have not charged you, sir !

*Pol.* Charles turns from me !

SECOND YEAR, 1731.—KING CHARLES.

PART I.

*Enter QUEEN POLYXENA and D'ORMEA.—A pause.*

*Pol.* And now, sir, what have you to say ?

*D'O.* Count Tende . .

*Pol.* Affirm not I betrayed you ; you resolve  
On uttering this strange intelligence  
—Nay, post yourself to find me ere I reach  
The capital, because you know King Charles  
Tarries a day or two at Evian baths  
Behind me :—but take warning,—here and thus

*[Seating herself in the royal seat.]*

I listen, if I listen—not your friend.

Explicitly the statement, if you still

Persist to urge it on me, must proceed :

I am not made for aught else.

*D'O.* Good ! Count Tende . . .

*Pol.* I, who mistrust you, shall acquaint King Charles  
Who even more mistrusts you.

*D'O.* Does he so ?

*Pol.* Why should he not ?

*D'O.* Ay, why not ? Motives, seek  
You virtuous people, motives ! Say, I serve



God at the devil's bidding—will that do ?  
 I'm proud : our people have been pacified,  
 Really I know not how—

*Pol.* By truthfulness.

*D'O.* Exactly ; that shows I had nought to do  
 With pacifying them. Our foreign perils  
 Also exceed my means to stay : but here  
 'T is otherwise, and my pride 's piqued. Count Tende  
 Completes a full year's absence : would you, madam,  
 Have the old monarch back, his mistress back,  
 His measures back ? I pray you, act upon  
 My counsel, or they will be.

*Pol.* When ?

*D'O.* Let's think.

Home-matters settled—Victor's coming now ;  
 Let foreign matters settle—Victor's here  
 Unless I stop him ; as I will, this way.

*Pol.* [*reading the papers he presents.*] If this should  
 prove a plot 'twixt you and Victor ?

You seek annoyances to give pretext  
 For what you say you fear !

*D'O.* Oh, possibly !

I go for nothing. Only show King Charles  
 That thus Count Tende purposes return,  
 And style me his inviter, if you please !

*Pol.* Half of your tale is true ; most like, the Count  
 Seeks to return : but why stay you with us ?  
 To aid in such emergencies.

*D'O.* Keep safe

Those papers : or, to serve me, leave no proof  
 I thus have counselled ! when the Count returns,  
 And the King abdicates, 't will stead me little  
 To have thus counselled.

*Pol.* The King abdicate !

*D'O.* He 's good, we knew long since—wise, we discover—

Firm, let us hope :—but I 'd have gone to work  
 With him away. Well !

[*CHARLES without.*] In the Council Chamber ?

*D'O.* All 's lost !

*Pol.* Oh, surely not King Charles ! He 's changed—  
 That 's not this year's care-burthened voice and step :  
 'T is last year's step, the Prince's voice !

*D'O.* I know.

[*Enter CHARLES—D'ORMEA retiring a little.*]

*Cha.* Now wish me joy, Polyxena ! Wish it me  
 The old way ! [*She embraces him.*]

There was too much cause for that !  
 But I have found myself again. What news  
 At Turin ? Oh, if you but felt the load  
 I 'm free of—free ! I said this year would end  
 Or it, or me—but I am free, thank God !

*Pol.* How, Charles ?

*Cha.* You do not guess ? The day I found  
 Sardinia's hideous coil, at home, abroad,  
 And how my father was involved in it,—  
 Of course, I vowed to rest and smile no more  
 Until I cleared his name from obloquy.

We did the people right—'t was much to gain  
 That point, redress our nobles' grievance, too—  
 But that took place here, was no crying shame :  
 All must be done abroad,—if I abroad  
 Appeased the justly-angered Powers, destroyed  
 The scandal, took down Victor's name at last  
 From a bad eminence, I then might breathe  
 And rest ! No moment was to lose. Behold  
 The proud result—a Treaty, Austria, Spain  
 Agree to—

*D'O.* [*Aside.*] I shall merely stipulate  
 For an experienced headsman.

*Cha.* Not a soul  
 Is compromised : the blotted past 's a blank :  
 Even D'Ormea escapes unquestioned. See !  
 It reached me from Vienna ; I remained  
 At Evian to dispatch the Count his news ;  
 'T is gone to Chambery a week ago—  
 And here am I : do I deserve to feel  
 Your warm white arms around me ?

*D'O.* [*Coming forward.*] He knows that ?

*Cha.* What, in Heaven's name, means this ?

*D'O.* He knows that matters

Are settled at Vienna ? Not too late !  
 Plainly, unless you post this very hour  
 Some man you trust (say, me) to Chambery  
 And take precautions I acquaint you with,  
 Your father will return here.

*Cha.* Are you crazed,

D'Ormea? Here? For what? As well return  
To take his crown!

*D'O.* He will return for that.

*Cha.* [to POLYXENA.] You have not listened to this man?

*Pol.* He spoke

About your safety—and I listened.

[*He disengages himself from her arms.*]

*Cha.* [to D'ORMEA.] What  
Apprised you of the Count's intentions?

*D'O.* Me?

His heart, sir; you may not be used to read  
Such evidence however; therefore read

[*Pointing to POLYXENA'S papers.*]

My evidence.

*Cha.* [to POLYXENA.] Oh, worthy this of you!  
And of your speech I never have forgotten,  
Though I professed forgetfulness; which haunts me  
As if I did not know how false it was;  
Which made me toil unconsciously thus long  
'That there might be no least occasion left  
For aught of its prediction coming true!  
And now, when there is left no least occasion  
To instigate my father to such crime—  
When I might venture to forget (I hoped)  
That speech and recognize Polyxena—  
Oh worthy, to revive, and tenfold worse,  
That plague! D'Ormea at your ear, his slanders  
Still in your hand! Silent?

*Pol.* As the wronged are.

*Cha.* And you, D'Ormea, since when have you presumed

To spy upon my father? I conceive  
What that wise paper shows, and easily.  
Since when?

*D'O.* The when and where and how belong  
To me. 'T is sad work, but I deal in such.  
You oftentimes serve yourself; I'd serve you here:  
Use makes me not so squeamish. In a word,  
Since the first hour he went to Chambery,  
Of his seven servants, five have I suborned.

*Cha.* You hate my father?

*D'O.* Oh, just as you will!

[*Looking at POLYXENA*]

A minute since, I loved him—hate him, now!  
What matter?—if you ponder just one thing:  
Has he that treaty?—he is setting forward  
Already. Are your guards here?

*Cha.* Well for you

They are not! [*To POL.*] Him I knew of old, but you—  
To hear that pickthank, further his designs! [*To D'O.*  
Guards?—were they here, I'd bid them, for your trouble,  
Arrest you.

*D'O.* Guards you shall not want. I lived  
The servant of your choice, not of your need.  
You never greatly needed me till now  
That you discard me. This is my arrest.  
Again I tender you my charge—its duty



D'Ormea ? [*Pushing away the stool which is by the  
KING'S chair.*]

I want that meeting over first,  
I know not why. Tush, he, D'Ormea, slow  
To hearten me, the supple knave ? That burst  
Of spite so eased him ! He 'll inform me . . .

What ?

Why come I hither ? All 's in rough : let all  
Remain rough. There 's full time to draw back—nay,  
There's nought to draw back from, as yet ; whereas,  
If reason should be, to arrest a course  
Of error—reason good, to interpose  
And save, as I have saved so many times,  
Our House, admonish my son's giddy youth,  
Relieve him of a weight that proves too much—  
Now is the time,—or now, or never.

'Faith,

This kind of step is pitiful, not due  
To Charles, this stealing back—hither, because  
He 's from his capital ! Oh Victor ! Victor !  
But thus it is. The age of crafty men  
Is loathsome ; youth contrives to carry off  
Dissimulation ; we may intersperse  
Extenuating passages of strength,  
Ardour, vivacity and wit—may turn  
E'en guile into a voluntary grace :  
But one's old age, when graces drop away  
And leave guile the pure staple of our lives—  
Ah, loathsome !

Not so—or why pause I? Turin  
Is mine to have, were I so minded, for  
The asking ; all the army 's mine—I 've witnessed  
Each private fight beneath me ; all the Court 's  
Mine too ; and, best of all, D'Ormea 's still  
D'Ormea and mine. There's some grace clinging yet.  
Had I decided on this step, ere midnight  
I 'd take the crown.

No. Just this step to rise  
Exhausts me. Here am I arrived : the rest  
Must be done for me. Would I could sit here  
And let things right themselves, the masque unmasque  
Of the old King, crownless, grey hair and hot blood,—  
The young King, crowned, but calm before his time,  
They say,—the eager mistress with her taunts,—  
And the sad earnest wife who motions me  
Away—ay, there she knelt to me ! E'en yet  
I can return and sleep at Chambery  
A dream out.

Rather shake it off at Turin,  
King Victor ! Say: to Turin—yes, or no ?

'T is this relentless noonday-lighted chamber,  
Lighted like life but silent as the grave,  
That disconcerts me. That 's the change must strike.  
No silence last year ! Some one flung doors wide  
(Those two great doors which scrutinize me now)  
And out I went 'mid crowds of men—men talking,  
Men watching if my lip fell or brow knit,  
Men saw me safe forth, put me on my road :



That makes the misery of this return.  
Oh had a battle done it ! Had I dropped,  
Haling some battle, three entire days old,  
Hither and thither by the forehead—dropped  
In Spain, in Austria, best of all, in France—  
Spurned on its horns or underneath its hooves,  
When the spent monster went upon its knees  
To pad and pash the prostrate wretch—I, Victor,  
Sole to have stood up against France, beat down  
By inches, brayed to pieces finally  
In some vast unimaginable charge,  
A flying hell of horse and foot and guns  
Over me, and all 's lost, for ever lost,  
There 's no more Victor when the world wakes up !  
Then silence, as of a raw battle-field,  
Throughout the world. Then after (as whole days  
After, you catch at intervals faint noise  
Through the stiff crust of frozen blood)—there creeps  
A rumour forth, so faint, no noise at all,  
That a strange old man, with face outworn for wounds,  
Is stumbling on from frontier town to town,  
Begging a pittance that may help him find  
His Turin out ; what scorn and laughter follow  
The coin you fling into his cap ! And last,  
Some bright morn, how men crowd about the midst  
O' the market-place, where takes the old king breath  
Ere with his crutch he strike the palace-gate  
Wide ope !

To Turin, yes or no—or no ?

[*Re-enter CHARLES with papers.*]

*Cha.* Just as I thought ! A miserable falsehood  
Of hirelings discontented with their pay  
And longing for enfranchisement ! A few  
Testy expressions of old age that thinks  
To keep alive its dignity o'er slaves  
By means that suit their natures !

[*Tearing them.*] Thus they shake  
My faith in Victor !

[*Turning, he discovers VICTOR.*]

*Vic.* [*after a pause.*] Not at Evian, Charles ?  
What 's this ? Why do you run to close the doors ?  
No welcome for your father ?

*Cha.* [*Aside.*] Not his voice !  
What would I give for one imperious tone  
Of the old sort ! That 's gone for ever.

*Vic.* Must  
I ask once more . . .

*Cha.* No—I concede it, sir !  
You are returned for . . . true, your health declines ;  
True, Chambery 's a bleak unkindly spot ;  
You 'd choose one fitter for your final lodge—  
Veneria, or Moncaglièr—ay, that 's close  
And I concede it.

*Vic.* I received advices  
Of the conclusion of the Spanish matter,  
Dated from Evian Baths . . .

*Cha.* And you forbore  
To visit me at Evian, satisfied

The work I had to do would fully task  
 The little wit I have, and that your presence  
 Would only disconcert me—

*Vic.*

Charles?

*Cha.*

—Me, set

For ever in a foreign course to yours,  
 And . . .

Sir, this way of wile were good to catch,  
 But I have not the sleight of it. The truth !  
 Though I sink under it ! What brings you here ?

*Vic.* Not hope of this reception, certainly,  
 From one who 'd scarce assume a stranger mode  
 Of speech, did I return to bring about  
 Some awfulest calamity !

*Cha.*

—You mean,

Did you require your crown again ! Oh yes,  
 I should speak otherwise ! But turn not that  
 To jesting ! Sir, the truth ! Your health declines ?  
 Is aught deficient in your equipage ?  
 Wisely you seek myself to make complaint,  
 And foil the malice of the world which laughs  
 At petty discontents ; but I shall care  
 That not a soul knows of this visit. Speak !

*Vic.* [*Aside.*] Here is the grateful much-professing  
 son

Prepared to worship me, for whose sole sake  
 I think to waive my plans of public good !

[*Aloud.*] Nay, Charles, if I did seek to take once more  
 My crown, were so disposed to plague myself,

What would be warrant for this bitterness ?

I gave it—grant I would resume it—well ?

*Cha.* I should say simply—leaving out the why  
And how—you made me swear to keep that crown :  
And as you then intended . . .

*Vic.* Fool ! What way  
Could I intend or not intend ? As man,  
With a man's will, when I say " I intend,"  
I can intend up to a certain point,  
No further. I intended to preserve  
The crown of Savoy and Sardinia whole :  
And if events arise demonstrating  
The way, I hoped should guard it, rather like  
To lose it . . .

*Cha.* Keep within your sphere and mine !  
It is God's province we usurp on, else.  
Here, blindfold through the maze of things we walk  
By a slight clue of false, true, right and wrong ;  
All else is rambling and presumption. I  
Have sworn to keep this kingdom : there 's my truth.

*Vic.* Truth, boy, is here, within my breast ; and in  
Your recognition of it, truth is, too ;  
And in the effect of all this tortuous dealing  
With falsehood, used to carry out the truth,  
—In its success, this falsehood turns, again,  
Truth for the world ! But you are right : these themes  
Are over-subtle. I should rather say  
In such a case, frankly,—it fails, my scheme :  
I hoped to see you bring about, yourself,

What I must bring about. I interpose  
On your behalf—with my son's good in sight—  
To hold what he is nearly letting go,  
Confirm his title, add a grace perhaps.  
There's Sicily, for instance,—granted me  
And taken back, some years since: till I give  
That island with the rest, my work's half done.  
For his sake, therefore, as of those he rules . . .

*Cha.* Our sakes are one; and that, you could not say,  
Because my answer would present itself  
Forthwith:—a year has wrought an age's change.  
This people's not the people now, you once  
Could benefit; nor is my policy  
Your policy.

*Vic. [with an outburst.]* I know it! You undo  
All I have done—my life of toil and care!  
I left you this the absolutest rule  
In Europe: do you think I will sit still  
And see you throw power to the populace—  
See my Sardinia, that has stood apart,  
Join in the mad and democratic whirl  
Whereto I see all Europe haste full tide?  
England casts off her kings; France mimics England:  
This realm I hoped was safe! Yet here I talk,  
When I can save it, not by force alone,  
But bidding plagues, which follow sons like you,  
Fasten upon my disobedient . . .

*[Recollecting himself.]* Surely  
I could say this—if minded so—my son?

*Cha.* You could not. Bitterer curses than your curse  
Have I long since denounced upon myself  
If I misused my power. In fear of these  
I entered on those measures—will abide  
By them : so, I should say, Count Tende . . .

*Vic.*

No !

But no ! But if, my Charles, your—more than old—  
Half-foolish father urged these arguments,  
And then confessed them futile, but said plainly  
That he forgot his promise, found his strength  
Fail him, had thought at savage Chambery  
Too much of brilliant Turin, Rivoli here,  
And Susa, and Veneria, and Superga—  
Pined for the pleasant places he had built  
When he was fortunate and young—

*Cha.*

My father !

*Vic.* Stay yet !—and if he said he could not die  
Deprived of baubles he had put aside,  
He deemed, for ever—of the Crown that binds  
Your brain up, whole, sound and impregnable,  
Creating kingliness—the Sceptre too,  
Whose mere wind, should you wave it, back would beat  
Invaders—and the golden Ball which throbs  
As if you grasped the palpitating heart  
Indeed o' the realm, to mould as you may choose !  
—If I must totter up and down the streets  
My sires built, where myself have introduced  
And fostered laws and letters, sciences,  
The civil and the military arts !

Stay, Charles ! I see you letting me pretend  
 To live my former self once more—King Victor,  
 The venturous yet politic : they style me  
 Again, the Father of the Prince : friends wink  
 Good-humouredly at the delusion you  
 So sedulously guard from all rough truths  
 That else would break upon my dotage !—You—  
 Whom now I see preventing my old shame—  
 I tell not, point by cruel point, my tale—  
 For is 't not in your breast my brow is hid ?  
 Is not your hand extended ? Say you not . . .

[*Enter D'ORMEA, leading in POLYXENA.*

*Pol.* [*advancing and withdrawing CHARLES—to VICTOR.*]

In this conjuncture even, he would say  
 (Though with a moistened eye and quivering lip)  
 The suppliant is my father. I must save  
 A great man from himself, nor see him fling  
 His well-earned fame away : there must not follow  
 Ruin so utter, a break-down of worth  
 So absolute : no enemy shall learn,  
 He thrust his child 'twixt danger and himself,  
 And, when that child somehow stood danger out,  
 Stole back with serpent wiles to ruin Charles  
 —Body, that 's much,—and soul, that 's more—and realm,  
 That 's most of all ! No enemy shall say . . .

*D'O.* Do you repent, sir ?

*Vic.* [*resuming himself.*] D'Ormea ? This is well !  
 Worthily done, King Charles, craftily done !  
 Judiciously you post these, to o'erhear

The little your importunate father thrusts  
 Himself on you to say !—Ah, they 'll correct  
 The amiable blind facility  
 You show in answering his peevish suit.  
 What can he need to sue for ? Bravely, D'Ormea,  
 Have you fulfilled your office : but for you,  
 The old Count might have drawn some few more livres  
 To swell his income ! Had you, lady, missed  
 The moment, a permission would be granted  
 To buttress up my ruinous old pile !  
 But you remember properly the list  
 Of wise precautions I took when I gave  
 Nearly as much away—to reap the fruits  
 I might have looked for !

*Cha.*

Thanks, sir : degrade me,

So you remain yourself ! Adieu !

*Vic.*

I 'll not

Forget it for the future, nor presume  
 Next time to slight such mediators ! Nay—  
 Had I first moved them both to intercede,  
 I might secure a chamber in Moncagliar  
 —Who knows ?

*Cha.*

Adieu !

*Vic.*

You bid me this adieu

With the old spirit ?

*Cha.*

Adieu !

*Vic.*

Charles—Charles !

*Cha.*

Adieu !

‘VICTOR *gros.*



*Cha.* You were mistaken, Marquis, as you hear !  
 'T was for another purpose the Count came.  
 The Count desires Moncaglier. Give the order !

*D'O.* [*leisurely.*] Your minister has lost your confidence,  
 Asserting late, for his own purposes,  
 Count Tende would . . .

*Cha.* [*flinging his badge back.*] Be still the minister !  
 And give a loose to your insulting joy ;  
 It irks me more thus stifled than expressed :  
 Loose it !

*D'O.* There 's none to loose, alas !—I see  
 I never am to die a martyr.

*Pol.* Charles !

*Cha.* No praise, at least, Polyxena—no praise !

## KING CHARLES : PART II.

*D'ORMEA seated, folding papers he has been examining.*

This at the last effects it : now, King Charles  
 Or else King Victor—that 's a balance : but now,  
 D'Ormea the arch-culprit, either turn  
 O' the scale,—that 's sure enough. A point to solve,  
 My masters, moralists, whate'er your style !  
 When you discover why I push myself  
 Into a pitfall you 'd pass safely by,  
 Impart to me among the rest ! No matter.  
 Prompt are the righteous ever with their rede  
 To us the wrongful : lesson them this once !

For safe among the wicked are you set,  
 D'Ormea ! We lament life's brevity,  
 Yet quarter e'en the threescore years and ten,  
 Nor stick to call the quarter roundly "life."  
 D'Ormea was wicked, say, some twenty years ;  
 A tree so long was stunted ; afterward,  
 What if it grew, continued growing, till  
 No fellow of the forest equalled it ?  
 'T was a stump then ; a stump it still must be :  
 While forward saplings, at the outset checked,  
 In virtue of that first sprout keep their style  
 Amid the forest's green fraternity.  
 Thus I shoot up to surely get lopped down  
 And bound up for the burning. Now for it !

*Enter CHARLES and POLYXENA with Attendants.*

*D'O. [rises.]* Sir, in the due discharge of this my office—

This enforced summons of yourself from Turin,  
 And the disclosure I am bound to make  
 To-night,—there must already be, I feel,  
 So much that wounds . . .

*Cha.*

Well, sir ?

*D'O.*

—That I, perchance,

May utter also what, another time,  
 Would irk much,—it may prove less irksome now.

*Cha.* What would you utter ?

*D'O.*

That I from my soul

Grieve at to-night's event : for you I grieve,  
 E'en grieve for . . .

*Cha.* Tush, another time for talk !  
My kingdom is in imminent danger ?

*D'O.* Let  
The Count communicate with France—its King,  
His grandson, will have Fleury's aid for this,  
Though for no other war.

*Cha.* First for the levies :  
What forces can I muster presently ?

[*D'ORMEA delivers papers which CHARLES inspects.*

*Cha.* Good—very good. Montorio . . . how is this ?  
—Equip me double the old complement  
Of soldiers ?

*D'O.* Since his land has been relieved  
From double imposts, this he manages :  
But under the late monarch . . .

*Cha.* Peace ! I know.  
Count Spava has omitted mentioning  
What proxy is to head these troops of his.

*D'O.* Count Spava means to head his troops himself.  
Something to fight for now ; “Whereas,” says he,  
“Under the sovereign's father” . . .

*Cha.* It would seem  
That all my people love me.

*D'O.* Yes.

[*To POLYXENA while CHARLES continues to inspect the papers.*

A temper  
Like Victor's may avail to keep a state ;  
He terrifies men and they fall not off ;  
Good to restrain : best, if restraint were all.

But, with the silent circle round him, ends  
Such sway: our King's begins precisely there.  
For to suggest, impel and set at work,  
Is quite another function. Men may slight,  
In time of peace, the King who brought them peace:  
In war,—his voice, his eyes, help more than fear.  
They love you, sir!

*Cha.* [*to Attendants.*] Bring the regalia forth!  
Quit the room! And now, Marquis, answer me!  
Why should the King of France invade my realm?

*D'O.* Why? Did I not acquaint your Majesty  
An hour ago?

*Cha.* I choose to hear again  
What then I heard.

*D'O.* Because, sir, as I said,  
Your father is resolved to have his crown  
At any risk; and, as I judge, calls in  
The foreigner to aid him.

*Cha.* And your reason  
For saying this?

*D'O.* [*Aside.*] Ay, just his father's way!  
[*To CH.*] The Count wrote yesterday to your forces'  
Chief,  
Rhebinder—made demand of help—

*Cha.* To try  
Rhebinder—he's of alien blood: aught else?

*D'O.* Receiving a refusal,—some hours after,  
The Count called on Del Borgo to deliver  
The Act of Abdication: he refusing,

Or hesitating, rather—

*Cha.* What ensued?

*D'O.* At midnight, only two hours since, at Turin,  
He rode in person to the citadel  
With one attendant, to the Soccorso gate,  
And bade the governor, San Remi, open—  
Admit him.

*Cha.* For a purpose I divine.  
These three were faithful, then?

*D'O.* They told it me.  
And I—

*Cha.* Most faithful—

*D'O.* Tell it you—with this  
Moreover of my own : if, an hour hence,  
You have not interposed, the Count will be  
On his road to France for succour.

*Cha.* Very good !  
You do your duty now to me your monarch  
Fully, I warrant ?—have, that is, your project  
For saving both of us disgrace, no doubt ?

*D'O.* I give my counsel,—and the only one.  
A month since, I besought you to employ  
Restraints which had prevented many a pang :  
But now the harsher course must be pursued.  
These papers, made for the emergency,  
Will pain you to subscribe : this is a list  
Of those suspected merely—men to watch ;  
This—of the few of the Count's very household  
You must, however reluctantly, arrest ;

While here 's a method of remonstrance—sure  
Not stronger than the case demands—to take  
With the Count 's self.

*Cha.* Deliver those three papers.

*Pol.* [*while CHARLES inspects them—to D'ORMEA.*]  
Your measures are not over-harsh, sir : France  
Will hardly be deterred from her intents  
By these.

*D'O.* If who proposes might dispose,  
I could soon satisfy you. Even these,  
Hear what he 'll say at my presenting !

*Cha.* [*who has signed them.*] There !  
About the warrants ! You 've my signature.  
What turns you pale ? I do my duty by you  
In acting boldly thus on your advice.

*D'O.* [*reading them separately.*] Arrest the people !  
suspected merely ?

*Cha.* Did you suspect them ?

*D'O.* Doubtless : but—but—sir,  
This Forquieri 's governor of Turin,  
And Rivarol and he have influence over  
Half of the capital ! Rabella, too ?  
Why, sir—

*Cha.* Oh, leave the fear to me !

*D'O.* [*still reading.*] You bid me  
Incarcerate the people on this list ?  
Sir—

*Cha.* But you never bade arrest those men,  
So close related to my father too,

On trifling grounds?

*D'O.* Oh, as for that, St. George,  
President of Chambery's senators,  
Is hatching treason! still—

[*More troubled.*] Sir, Count Cumiane  
Is brother to your father's wife! What's here?  
Arrest the wife herself?

*Cha.* You seem to think  
A venial crime this plot against me. Well?

*D'O.* [*who has read the last paper.*] Wherefore am I  
thus ruined? Why not take

My life at once? This poor formality  
Is, let me say, unworthy you! Prevent it  
You, madam! I have served you, am prepared  
For all disgraces: only, let disgrace  
Be plain, be proper—proper for the world  
To pass its judgment on 'twixt you and me!  
Take back your warrant, I will none of it!

*Cha.* Here is a man to talk of fickleness!  
He stakes his life upon my father's falsehood;  
I bid him . . .

*D'O.* Not you! Were he trebly false,  
You do not bid me . . .

*Cha.* Is 't not written there?  
I thought so: give—I'll set it right.

*D'O.* Is it there?  
Oh yes, and plain—arrest him now—drag here  
Your father! And were all six times as plain,  
Do you suppose I trust it?

*Cha.* Just one word !  
You bring him, taken in the act of flight,  
Or else your life is forfeit

*D'O.* Ay, to Turin  
I bring him, and to morrow ?

*Cha.* Here and now !  
The whole thing is a lie, a hateful lie,  
As I believed and as my father said.  
I knew it from the first, but was compelled  
To circumvent you ; and the great D'Ormea,  
That baffled Alberoni and tricked Coscia,  
The miserable sower of such discord  
'Twixt sire and son, is in the toils at last.  
Oh I see ! you arrive—this plan of yours,  
Weak as it is, torments sufficiently  
A sick old peevish man—wings hasty speech,  
An ill-considered threat from him ; that 's noted ;  
Then out you ferret papers, his amusement  
In lonely hours of lassitude—examine  
The day-by-day report of your paid spies—  
And back you come : all was not ripe, you find,  
And, as you hope, may keep from ripening yet,  
But you were in bare time ! Only, 't were best  
I never saw my father—these old men  
Are potent in excuses : and meanwhile,  
D'Ormea's the man I cannot do without !

*Pol.* Charles—

*Cha.* Ah, no question ! You against me too !  
You'd have me eat and drink and sleep, live, die



With this lie coiled about me, choking me !  
 No, no, D'Ormea ! You venture life, you say,  
 Upon my father's perfidy : and I  
 Have, on the whole, no right to disregard  
 The chains of testimony you thus wind  
 About me ; though I do—do from my soul  
 Discredit them : still I must authorize  
 These measures, and I will. Perugia !

[*Many Officers enter.*] Count—

You and Solar, with all the force you have,  
 Stand at the Marquis' orders : what he bids,  
 Implicitly perform ! You are to bring  
 A traitor here ; the man that 's likest one  
 At present, fronts me ; you are at his beck  
 For a full hour ! he undertakes to show  
 A fouler than himself,—but, failing that,  
 Return with him, and, as my father lives,  
 He dies this night ! The clemency you blame  
 So oft, shall be revoked—rights exercised,  
 Too long abjured.

[*To D'ORMEA.*] Now sir, about the work !  
 To save your king and country ! Take the warrant !

D'O. You hear the sovereign's mandate, Count Perugia ?  
 Obey me ! As your diligence, expect  
 Reward ! All follow to Montcagliar !

Cha. [*in great anguish.*] D'Ormea ! [*D'ORMEA goes.*]  
 He goes, lit up with that appalling smile !

[*To POLYXENA after a pause.*]

At least you understand all this ?

*Pol.* These means  
Of our defence—these measures of precaution?

*Cha.* It must be the best way : I should have else  
Withered beneath his scorn.

*Pol.* What would you say?

*Cha.* Why, you don't think I mean to keep the crown,  
Polyxena?

*Pol.* You then believe the story  
In spite of all—that Victor 's coming?

*Cha.* Believe it?

I know that he is coming—feel the strength  
That has upheld me leave me at his coming !  
'T was mine, and now he takes his own again.  
Some kinds of strength are well enough to have ;  
But who 's to have that strength ? Let my crown go !  
I meant to keep it ; but I cannot—cannot !  
Only, he shall not taunt me—he, the first . . .  
See if he would not be the first to taunt me  
With having left his kingdom at a word.  
With letting it be conquered without stroke,  
With . . . no—no—'t is no worse than when he left !  
I 've just to bid him take it, and, that over,  
We 'll fly away—fly, for I loathe this Turin,  
This Rivoli, all titles loathe, all state.  
We 'd best go to your country—unless God  
Send I die now !

*Pol.* Charles, hear me !

*Cha.* And again  
Shall you be my Polyxena—you 'll take me

Out of this woe ! Yes, do speak, and keep speaking !  
 I would not let you speak just now, for fear  
 You'd counsel me against him : but talk, now,  
 As we two used to talk in blessed times :  
 Bid me endure all his caprices ; take me  
 From this mad post above him !

*Pol.*

I believe

We are undone, but from a different cause.  
 All your resources, down to the least guard,  
 Are at D'Ormea's beck. What if, the while,  
 He act in concert with your father ? We  
 Indeed were lost. This lonely Rivoli—  
 Where find a better place for them ?

*Cha. [pacing the room.]*

And why

Does Victor come ? To undo all that 's done,  
 Restore the past, prevent the future ! Seat  
 His mistress in your seat, and place in mine  
 . . . Oh, my own people, whom will you find there,  
 To ask of, to consult with, to care for,  
 To hold up with your hands ? Whom ? One that 's  
 false—

False—from the head's crown to the foot's sole, false !  
 The best is, that I knew it in my heart  
 From the beginning, and expected this,  
 And hated you, Polyxena, because  
 You saw thro' him, though I too saw thro' him,  
 Saw that he meant this while he crowned me, while  
 He prayed for me,—nay, while he kissed my brow,  
 I saw—

*Pol.* But if your measures take effect,  
D'Ormea true to you ?

*Cha.* Then worst of all !  
I shall have loosed that callous wretch on him !  
Well may the woman taunt him with his child—  
I, eating here his bread, clothed in his clothes,  
Seated upon his seat, let slip D'Ormea  
To outrage him ! We talk—perchance he tears  
My father from his bed ; the old hands feel  
For one who is not, but who should be there,  
He finds D'Ormea ! D'Ormea too finds him !  
The crowded chamber when the lights go out—  
Closed doors—the horrid scuffle in the dark—  
The accursed prompting of the minute ! My guards !  
To horse—and after, with me—and prevent !

*Pol.* [*seizing his hand.*] King Charles ! Pause here  
upon this strip of time  
Allotted you out of eternity !  
Crowns are from God : in his name you hold yours.  
Your life 's no least thing, were it fit your life  
Should be abjured along with rule ; but now,  
Keep both ! Your duty is to live and rule—  
You, who would vulgarly look fine enough  
In the world's eye, deserting your soul's charge,—  
Ay, you would have men's praise, this Rivoli  
Would be illumined ! While, as 't is, no doubt,  
Something of stain will ever rest on you ;  
No one will rightly know why you refused  
To abdicate ; they 'll talk of deeds you could

Have done, no doubt,—nor do I much expect  
 Future achievement will blot out the past,  
 Envelope it in haze—nor shall we two  
 Live happy any more. 'T will be, I feel,  
 Only in moments that the duty 's seen  
 As palpably as now—the months, the years  
 Of painful indistinctness are to come,  
 While daily must we tread these palace-rooms  
 Pregnant with memories of the past : your eye  
 May turn to mine and find no comfort there,  
 Through fancies that beset me, as yourself,  
 Of other courses, with far other issues,  
 We might have taken this great night : such bear,  
 As I will bear ! What matters happiness ?  
 Duty ! There 's man's one moment : this is yours !

*[Putting the crown on his head, and the sceptre in his hand, she places him on his seat : a long pause and silence.]*

*Enter D'ORMEA and VICTOR.*

*Vic.* At last I speak ; but once—that once, to you !  
 'T is you I ask, not these your varletry,  
 Who 's King of us ?

*Cha. [from his seat.]* Count Tende . .

*Vic.*

What your spies

Assert I ponder in my soul, I say—  
 Here to your face, amid your guards ! I choose  
 To take again the crown whose shadow I gave—  
 For still its potency surrounds the weak  
 White locks their felon hands have discomposed.  
 Or I 'll not ask who 's King, but simply, who

Withholds the crown I claim? Deliver it!  
I have no friend in the wide world : nor France  
Nor England cares for me : you see the sum  
Of what I can avail. Deliver it!

*Cha.* Take it, my father !

And now say in turn,  
Was it done well, my father—sure not well,  
To try me thus ! I might have seen much cause  
For keeping it—too easily seen cause !  
But, from that moment, e'en more woefully  
My life had pined away, than pine it will.  
Already you have much to answer for.  
My life to pine is nothing,—her sunk eyes  
Were happy once ! No doubt, my people think  
I am their King still . . . but I cannot strive !  
Take it !

*Vic.* [*one hand on the crown CHARLES offers, the other  
on his neck.*] So few years give it quietly,  
My son ! It will drop from me. See you not ?  
A crown 's unlike a sword to give away—  
That, let a strong hand to a weak hand give !  
But crowns should slip from palsied brows to heads  
Young as this head : yet mine is weak enough,  
E'en weaker than I knew. I seek for phrases  
To vindicate my right. 'T is of a piece !  
All is alike gone by with me—who beat  
Once D'Orleans in his lines—his very lines !  
To have been Eugene's comrade, Louis' rival,  
And now . . .

*Cha* [*putting the crown on him, to the rest.*] The King speaks, yet none kneels, I think !

*Vic.* I am then King ! As I became a King  
 Despite the nations, kept myself a King,  
 So I die King, with Kingship dying too  
 Around me ! I have lasted Europe's time !  
 What wants my story of completion ? Where  
 Must needs the damning break show ? Who mistrusts  
 My children here—tell they of any break  
 'Twixt my day's sunrise and its fiery fall ?  
 And who were by me when I died but they ?  
 D'Ormea there !

*Cha.* What means he ?

*Vic.* Ever there !

Charles—how to save your story ? Mine must go !  
 Say—say that you refused the crown to me !  
 Charles, yours shall be my story ! You immured  
 Me, say, at Rivoli. A single year  
 I spend without a sight of you, then die—  
 That will serve every purpose—tell that tale  
 The world !

*Cha.* Mistrust me ? Help !

*Vic.* Past help, past reach !

'T is in the heart—you cannot reach the heart :  
 This broke mine, that I did believe, you, Charles,  
 Would have denied and so disgraced me.

*Pol.* Charles

Has never ceased to be your subject, sir !  
 He reigned at first through setting up yourself

As pattern : if he e'er seemed harsh to you,  
 'T was from a too intense appreciation  
 Of your own character : he acted you—  
 Ne'er for an instant did I think it real,  
 Nor look for any other than this end.  
 I hold him worlds the worse on that account ;  
 But so it was.

*Cha.* [*to POLYX.*] I love you now indeed !  
 [*To VICTOR.*] You never knew me !

*Vic.* Hardly till this moment,  
 When I seem learning many other things  
 Because the time for using them is past.  
 If 't were to do again ! That 's idly wished.  
 Truthfulness might prove policy as good  
 As guile. Is this my daughter's forehead ? Yes :  
 I 've made it fitter now to be a queen's  
 Than formerly : I 've ploughed the deep lines there  
 Which keep too well a crown from slipping off.  
 No matter. Guile has made me King again.  
*Louis—'t was in King Victor's time :—long since,*  
*When Louis reigned and, also, Victor reigned.*  
 How the world talks already of us two !  
 God of eclipse and each discoloured star,  
 Why do I linger then ?

Ha ! Where lurks he ?  
 D'Ormea ! Nearer to your King ! Now stand !

[*Collecting his strength as D'ORMEA approaches.*  
 You lied, D'Ormea ! I do not repent. [*Dies.*



DRAMATIC LYRICS.

In a late edition were collected and redistributed the pieces first published in 1842, 1845 and 1855, respectively, under the titles of "Dramatic Lyrics," "Dramatic Romances," and "Men and Women." It is not worth while to disturb this arrangement.

Part of the Poems were inscribed to my dear friend John Kenyon ; I hope the whole may obtain the honour of an association with his memory.

R. B.

# DRAMATIC LYRICS.

---

## CAVALIER TUNES.\*

### *I. MARCHING ALONG.*

#### I.

KENTISH Sir Byng stood for his King,  
Bidding the crop-headed Parliament swing :  
And, pressing a troop unable to stoop  
And see the rogues flourish and honest folk droop,  
Marched them along, fifty score strong,  
Great-hearted gentlemen, singing this song.

#### II.

God for King Charles ! Pym and such carles  
To the Devil that prompts 'em their treasonous parles !

\* Such Poems as the majority in this volume might also come properly enough, I suppose, under the head of "Dramatic Pieces ;" being, though often Lyric in expression, always Dramatic in principle, and so many utterances of so many imaginary persons, not mine.—*R. B*

Cavaliers, up ! Lips from the cup,  
 Hands from the pasty, nor bite take nor sup  
 Till you 're—

*(Chorus) Marching along, fifty-score strong,  
 Great-hearted gentlemen, singing this song.*

## III.

Hampden to hell, and his obsequies' knell.  
 Serve Hazelrig, Fiennes, and young Harry as well !  
 England, good cheer ! Rupert is near !  
 Kentish and loyalists, keep we not here

*(Chorus) Marching along, fifty-score strong,  
 Great-hearted gentlemen, singing this song !*

## IV.

Then, God for King Charles ! Pym and his snarls  
 To the Devil that pricks on such pestilent carles !  
 Hold by the right, you double your might ;  
 So, onward to Nottingham, fresh for the fight,

*(Chorus) March we along, fifty-score strong,  
 Great-hearted gentlemen, singing this song !*

## II. GIVE A ROUSE.

## I.

King Charles, and who 'll do him right now ?  
 King Charles, and who 's ripe for fight now ?  
 Give a rouse : here 's, in hell's despite now,  
 King Charles !

II.

Who gave me the goods that went since?  
 Who raised me the house that sank once?  
 Who helped me to gold I spent since?  
 Who found me in wine you drank once?

*(Chorus) King Charles, and who 'll do him right now?  
 King Charles, and who 's ripe for fight now!  
 Give a rouse: here 's, in hell's despite now,  
 King Charles!*

III.

To whom used my boy George quaff else,  
 By the old fool's side that begot him?  
 For whom did he cheer and laugh else,  
 While Noll's damned troopers shot him?

*(Chorus) King Charles, and who 'll do him right now?  
 King Charles, and who 's ripe for fight now?  
 Give a rouse: here 's, in hell's despite now,  
 King Charles!*

---

III. BOOT AND SADDLE.

I.

Boot, saddle, to horse, and away!  
 Rescue my castle before the hot day  
 Brightens to blue from its silvery grey,

*(Chorus) Boot, saddle, to horse, and away!*

## II.

Ride past the suburbs, asleep as you 'd say ;  
 Many 's the friend there, will listen and pray  
 " God's luck to gallants that strike up the lay—

*(Chorus) " Boot, saddle, to horse, and away ! "*

## III.

Forty miles off, like a roebuck at bay,  
 Flouts Castle Brancepeth the Roundheads' array :  
 Who laughs, " Good fellows ere this, by my fay,

*(Chorus) " Boot, saddle, to horse, and away ? "*

## IV.

Who ? My wife Gertrude ; that, honest and gay,  
 Laughs when you talk of surrendering, " Nay !  
 " I've better counsellors ; what counsel they ?

*(Chorus) " Boot, saddle, to horse, and away ! "*

## THE LOST LEADER.

## I.

JUST for a handful of silver he left us,  
 Just for a riband to stick in his coat—  
 Found the one gift of which fortune bereft us,  
 Lost all the others, she lets us devote ;  
 They, with the gold to give, doled him out silver,  
 So much was theirs who so little allowed :

How all our copper had gone for his service !

Rags—were they purple, his heart had been proud !

We that had loved him so, followed him, honoured him,

Lived in his mild and magnificent eye,

Learned his great language, caught his clear accents,

Made him our pattern to live and to die !

Shakespeare was of us, Milton was for us,

Burns, Shelley, were with us,—they watch from their  
graves !

He alone breaks from the van and the freemen,

He alone sinks to the rear and the slaves !

II.

We shall march prospering,—not thro' his presence ;

Songs may inspirit us,—not from his lyre ;

Deeds will be done,—while he boasts his quiescence,

Still bidding crouch whom the rest bade aspire :

Blot out his name, then, record one lost soul more,

One task more declined, one more footpath untrod,

One more devils'-triumph and sorrow for angels,

One wrong more to man, one more insult to God !

Life's night begins : let him never come back to us !

There would be doubt, hesitation and pain,

Forced praise on our part—the glimmer of twilight,

Never glad confident morning again !

Best fight on well, for we taught him—strike gallantly,

Menace our heart ere we master his own ;

Then let him receive the new knowledge and wait us,

✓ Pardoned in heaven, the first by the throne !

“HOW THEY BROUGHT THE GOOD NEWS  
FROM GHENT TO AIX.”

[16—.]

I.

I SPRANG to the stirrup, and Joris, and he ;  
I galloped, Dirck galloped, we galloped all three ;  
“ Good speed ! ” cried the watch, as the gate-bolts  
undrew ;  
“ Speed ! ” echoed the wall to us galloping through ;  
Behind shut the postern, the lights sank to rest,  
And into the midnight we galloped abreast.

II.

Not a word to each other ; we kept the great pace  
Neck by neck, stride by stride, never changing our  
place ;  
I turned in my saddle and made its girths tight,  
Then shortened each stirrup, and set the pique right,  
Rebuckled the cheek-strap, chained slacker the bit,  
Nor galloped less steadily Roland a whit.

III.

’T was moonset at starting ; but while we drew near  
Lokeren, the cocks crew and twilight dawned clear ;



At Boom, a great yellow star came out to see ;  
 At Düffeld, 't was morning as plain as could be ;  
 And from Mecheln church-steeple we heard the half  
     chime,  
 So, Joris broke silence with, " Yet there is time ! "

IV.

At Aershot, up leaped of a sudden the sun,  
 And against him the cattle stood black every one,  
 To stare thro' the mist at us galloping past,  
 And I saw my stout galloper Roland at last,  
 With resolute shoulders, each butting away  
 The haze, as some bluff river headland its spray :

V.

And his low head and crest, just one sharp ear bent back  
 For my voice, and the other pricked out on his track ;  
 And one eye's black intelligence,—ever that glance  
 O'er its white edge at me, his own master, askance !  
 And the thick heavy spume-flakes which aye and anon  
 His fierce lips shook upwards in galloping on.

VI.

By Hasselt, Dirck groaned ; and cried Joris, " Stay  
     spur !  
 " Your Roos galloped bravely, the fault's not in her,  
 " We 'll remember at Aix"—for one heard the quick  
     wheeze  
 Of her chest, saw the stretched neck and staggering  
     knees, '

And sunk tail, and horrible heave of the flank,  
As down on her haunches she shuddered and sank.

## VII.

So, we were left galloping, Joris and I,  
Past Looz and past Tongres, no cloud in the sky ;  
The broad sun above laughed a pitiless laugh,  
'Neath our feet broke the brittle bright stubble like  
    chaff ;  
Till over by Dalhem a dome-spire sprang white,  
And " Gallop," gasped Joris, " for Aix is in sight ! "

## VIII.

" How they 'll greet us ! "—and all in a moment his roan  
Rolled neck and croup over, lay dead as a stone ;  
And there was my Roland to bear the whole weight  
Of the news which alone could save Aix from her fate,  
With his nostrils like pits full of blood to the brim,  
And with circles of red for his eye-sockets' rim.

## IX.

Then I cast loose my buffcoat, each holster let fall,  
Shook off both my jack-boots, let go belt and all,  
Stood up in the stirrup, leaned, patted his ear,  
Called my Roland his pet-name, my horse without peer ;  
Clapped my hands, laughed and sang, any noise, bad or  
    good,  
Till at length into Aix Roland galloped and stood.

X.

And all I remember is, friends flocking round  
 As I sat with his head 'twixt my knees on the ground ;  
 And no voice but was praising this Roland of mine,  
 As I poured down his throat our last measure of wine,  
 Which (the burgesses voted by common consent)  
 Was no more than his due who brought good news from  
 Ghent.

---

THROUGH THE METIDJA TO ABD-EL-KADR.

1842.

I.

As I ride, as I ride,  
 With a full heart for my guide,  
 So its tide rocks my side,  
 As I ride, as I ride,  
 That, as I were double-eyed,  
 He, in whom our Tribes confide,  
 Is descried, ways untried  
 As I ride, as I ride.

II.

As I ride, as I ride  
 To our Chief and his Allied,  
 Who dares chide my heart's pride  
 As I ride, as I ride?

Or are witnesses denied—  
Through the desert waste and wide  
Do I glide unespied  
As I ride, as I ride?

## III.

As I ride, as I ride,  
When an inner voice has cried,  
The sands slide, nor abide  
(As I ride, as I ride)  
O'er each visioned homicide  
That came vaunting (has he lied?)  
To reside—where he died,  
As I ride, as I ride.

## IV.

As I ride, as I ride,  
Ne'er has spur my swift horse plied,  
Yet his hide, streaked and pied,  
As I ride, as I ride,  
Shows where sweat has sprung and dried,  
—Zebra-footed, ostrich-thighed—  
How has vied stride with stride  
As I ride, as I ride !

## V.

As I ride, as I ride,  
Could I loose what Fate has tied,  
Ere I pried, she should hide  
(As I ride, as I ride)

All that 's meant me—satisfied  
 When the Prophet and the Bride  
 Stop veins I 'd have subside  
 As I ride, as I ride !

# NATIONALITY IN DRINKS.

## I.

My heart sank with our Claret-flask,  
 Just now, beneath the heavy sedges  
 That serve this pond's black face for mask ;  
 And still at yonder broken edges  
 O' the hole, where up the bubbles glisten,  
 After my heart I look and listen.

## II.

Our laughing little flask, compelled  
 Thro' depth to depth more bleak and shady ;  
 As when, both arms beside her held,  
 Feet straightened out, some gay French lady  
 Is caught up from life's light and motion,  
 And dropped into death's silent ocean !

---

Up jumped Tokay on our table,  
 Like a pygmy castle-warder,  
 Dwarfish to see, but stout and able,  
 Arms and accoutrements all in order ;

And fierce he looked North, then, wheeling South,  
Blew with his bugle a challenge to Drouth,  
Cocked his flap-hat with the tosspot-feather,  
Twisted his thumb in his red moustache,  
Jingled his huge brass spurs together,  
Tightened his waist with its Buda sash,  
And then, with an impudence nought could abash,  
Shrugged his hump-shoulder, to tell the beholder,  
For twenty such knaves he should laugh but the bolder:  
And so, with his sword-hilt gallantly jutting,  
And dexter-hand on his haunch abutting,  
Went the little man, Sir Ausbruch, strutting!

---

Here 's to Nelson's memory!  
'T is the second time that I, at sea,  
Right off Cape Trafalgar here,  
Have drunk it deep in British Beer.  
Nelson for ever—any time  
Am I his to command in prose or rhyme!  
Give me of Nelson only a touch,  
And I save it, be it little or much:  
Here 's one our Captain gives, and so  
Down at the word, by George, shall it go!  
He says that at Greenwich they point the beholder  
To Nelson's coat, " still with tar on the shoulder,  
" For he used to lean with one shoulder digging,  
" Jigging, as it were, and zig-zag-zigging  
" Up against the mizen-rigging!"

# GARDEN FANCIES.

## I. THE FLOWER'S NAME.

### I.

HERE 's the garden she walked across,  
 Arm in my arm, such a short while since :  
 Hark, now I push its wicket, the moss  
 Hinders the hinges and makes them wince !  
 She must have reached this shrub ere she turned,  
 As back with that murmur the wicket swung ;  
 For she laid the poor snail, my chance foot spurned,  
 To feed and forget it the leaves among.

### II.

Down this side of the gravel-walk  
 She went while her robe's edge brushed the box :  
 And here she paused in her gracious talk  
 To point me a moth on the milk-white phlox.  
 Roses, ranged in valiant row,  
 I will never think that she passed you by !  
 She loves you noble roses, I know ;  
 But yonder, see, where the rock-plants lie !

### III.

This flower she stopped at, finger on lip,  
 Stooped over, in doubt, as settling its claim ;

Till she gave me, with pride to make no slip,  
Its soft meandering Spanish name :  
What a name ! Was it love or praise ?  
Speech half-asleep or song half-awake ?  
I must learn Spanish, one of these days,  
Only for that slow sweet name's sake.

## IV.

Roses, if I live and do well,  
I may bring her, one of these days,  
To fix you fast with as fine a spell,  
Fit you each with his Spanish phrase ;  
But do not detain me now ; for she lingers  
There, like sunshine over the ground,  
And ever I see her soft white fingers  
Searching after the bud she found.

## V.

Flower, you Spaniard, look that you grow not,  
Stay as you are and be loved for ever !  
Bud, if I kiss you 't is that you blow not,  
Mind, the shut pink mouth opens never !  
For while it pouts, her fingers wrestle,  
Twinkling the audacious leaves between,  
Till round they turn and down they nestle—  
Is not the dear mark still to be seen ?

## VI.

Where I find her not, beauties vanish ;  
Whither I follow her, beauties flee ;



Is there no method to tell her in Spanish  
 June's twice June since she breathed it with me?  
 Come, bud, show me the least of her traces,  
 Treasure my lady's lightest footfall!  
 —Ah, you may flout and turn up your faces—  
 Roses, you are not so fair after all!

---

*II. SIBRANDUS SCHAFNABURGENSIS.*

I.

Plague take all your pedants, say I!  
 He who wrote what I hold in my hand,  
 Centuries back was so good as to die,  
 Leaving this rubbish to cumber the land;  
 This, that was a book in its time,  
 Printed on paper and bound in leather,  
 Last month in the white of a matin-prime  
 Just when the birds sang all together.

II.

Into the garden I brought it to read,  
 And under the arbuté and laurustine  
 Read it, so help me grace in my need,  
 From title-page to closing line.  
 Chapter on chapter did I count,  
 As a curious traveller counts Stonehenge;  
 Added up the mortal amount;  
 And then proceeded to my revenge.

## III.

Yonder 's a plum-tree with a crevice  
An owl would build in, were he but sage ;  
For a lap of moss, like a fine pont-levis  
In a castle of the middle age,  
Joins to a lip of gum, pure amber ;  
When he 'd be private, there might he spend  
Hours alone in his lady's chamber :  
Into this crevice I dropped our friend.

## IV.

Splash, went he, as under he ducked,  
—At the bottom, I knew, rain-drippings stagnate  
Next, a handful of blossoms I plucked  
To bury him with, my bookshelf's magnate ;  
Then I went in-doors, brought out a loaf,  
Half a cheese, and a bottle of Chablis ;  
Lay on the grass and forgot the oaf  
Over a jolly chapter of Rabelais.

## V.

Now, this morning, betwixt the moss  
And gum that locked our friend in limbo,  
A spider had spun his web across,  
And sat in the midst with arms akimbo :  
So, I took pity, for learning's sake,  
And, *de profundis, accentibus lætis,*  
*Cantate !* quoth I, as I got a rake ;  
And up I fished his delectable treatise.

VI.

Here you have it, dry in the sun,  
 With all the binding all of a blister,  
 And great blue spots where the ink has run,  
 And reddish streaks that wink and glister  
 O'er the page so beautifully yellow :  
 Oh, well have the droppings played their tricks !  
 Did he guess how toadstools grow, this fellow ?  
 Here 's one stuck in his chapter six !

VII.

How did he like it when the live creatures  
 Tickled and toused and browsed him all over,  
 And worm, slug, eft, with serious features,  
 Came in, each one, for his right of trove ?  
 —When the water-beetle with great blind deaf face  
 Made of her eggs the stately deposit,  
 And the newt borrowed just so much of the preface  
 As tiled in the top of his black wife's closet ?

VIII.

All that life and fun and romping,  
 All that frisking and twisting and coupling,  
 While slowly our poor friend's leaves were swamping  
 And clasps were cracking and covers suppling !  
 As if you had carried sour John Knox  
 To the play-house at Paris, Vienna or Munich,  
 Fastened him into a front-row box,  
 And danced off the ballet with trousers and tunic.

## IX.

Come, old martyr ! What, torment enough is it ?  
 Back to my room shall you take your sweet self.  
 Good-bye, mother-beetle ; husband-eft, *sufficit* !  
 See the snug niche I have made on my shelf !  
 A.'s book shall prop you up, B.'s shall cover you,  
 Here 's C. to be grave with, or D. to be gay,  
 And with E. on each side, and F. right over you,  
 Dry-rot at ease till the Judgment-day !

---

## SOLILOQUY OF THE SPANISH CLOISTER.

## I.

GR-R-R—there go, my heart's abhorrence !  
 Water your damned flower-pots, do !  
 If hate killed men, Brother Lawrence,  
 God's blood, would not mine kill you !  
 What ? your myrtle-bush wants trimming ?  
 Oh, that rose has prior claims—  
 Needs its leaden vase filled brimming ?  
 Hell dry you up with its flames !

## II.

At the meal we sit together :  
*Salve tibi* ! I must hear  
 Wise talk of the kind of weather,  
 Sort of season, time of year :

*Not a plenteous cork-crop : scarcely  
Dare we hope oak-galls, I doubt :  
What 's the Latin name for "parsley?"  
What 's the Greek name for Swine's Snout?*

III.

Whew ! We 'll have our platter burnished  
Laid with care on our own shelf !  
With a fire-new spoon we 're furnished,  
And a goblet for ourself,  
Rinsed like something sacrificial  
Ere 't is fit to touch our chaps—  
Marked with L. for our initial !  
(He-he ! There his lily snaps !)

IV.

*Saint*, forsooth ! While brown Dolores  
Squats outside the Convent bank  
With Sanchicha, telling stories,  
Steeping tresses in the tank,  
Blue-black, lustrous, thick like horsehairs  
—Can't I see his dead eye glow,  
Bright as 't were a Barbary corsair's ?  
(That is, if he 'd let it show !)

V.

When he finishes refection,  
Knife and fork he never lays  
Cross-wise, to my recollection,  
As do I, in Jesu's praise.

I the Trinity illustrate,  
 Drinking watered orange-pulp—  
 In three sips the Arian frustrate ;  
 While he drains his at one gulp.

## VL

Oh, those melons? If he 's able  
 We 're to have a feast ! so nice !  
 One goes to the Abbot's table,  
 All of us get each a slice.  
 How go on your flowers? None double ?  
 Not one fruit-sort can you spy ?  
 Strange !—And I, too, at such trouble  
 Keep them close-nipped on the sly !

## VII.

There 's a great text in Galatians,  
 Once you trip on it, entails  
 Twenty-nine distinct damnations,  
 One sure, if another fails :  
 If I trip him just a-dying,  
 Sure of heaven as sure can be,  
 Spin him round and send him flying  
 Off to hell, a Manichee ?

## VIII.

Or, my scrofulous French novel  
 On grey paper with blunt type !  
 Simply glance at it, you grovel  
 Hand and foot in Belial's gripe :

If I double down its pages  
 At the woeful sixteenth print,  
 When he gathers his greengages,  
 Ope a sieve and slip it in 't ?

IX.

Or, there 's Satan !—one might venture  
 Pledge one's soul to him, yet leave  
 Such a flaw in the indenture  
 As he 'd miss till, past retrieve,  
 Blasted lay that rose-acacia  
 We 're so proud of ! *Hy, Zy, Hine . . .*  
 'St, there's Vespers ! *Plena gratiâ*  
*Ave, Virgo !* Gr-r-r—you swine !

---

THE LABORATORY.

ANCIEN RÉGIME.

I.

Now that I, tying thy glass mask tightly,  
 May gaze thro' these faint smokes curling whitely,  
 As thou pliest thy trade in this devil's-smithy—  
 Which is the poison to poison her, prithee ?

II.

He is with her, and they know that I know  
 Where they are, what they do : they believe my tears  
 flow  
 While they laugh, laugh at me, at me fled to the drear  
 Empty church, to pray God in, for them !—I am here.

## III.

Grind away, moisten and mash up thy paste,  
Pound at thy powder,—I am not in haste !  
Better sit thus, and observe thy strange things,  
Than go where men wait me and dance at the King's.

## IV.

That in the mortar—you call it a gum ?  
Ah, the brave tree whence such gold oozings come !  
And yonder soft phial, the exquisite blue,  
Sure to taste sweetly,—is that poison too ?

## V.

Had I but all of them, thee and thy treasures,  
What a wild crowd of invisible pleasures !  
To carry pure death in an earring, a casket,  
A signet, a fan-mount, a filigree basket !

## VI.

Soon, at the King's, a mere lozenge to give  
And Pauline should have just thirty minutes to live !  
But to light a pastile, and Elise, with her head  
And her breast and her arms and her hands, should  
drop dead !

## VII.

Quick—is it finished ? The colour 's too grim !  
Why not soft like the phial's, enticing and dim ?  
Let it brighten her drink, let her turn it and stir,  
And try it and taste, ere she fix and prefer !



VIII.

What a drop ! She's not little, no minion like me !  
That's why she ensnared him : this never will free  
The soul from those masculine eyes,—say, “ no ! ”  
To that pulse's magnificent come-and-go.

IX.

For only last night, as they whispered, I brought  
My own eyes to bear on her so, that I thought  
Could I keep them one half minute fixed, she would fall  
Shrivelled ; she fell not ; yet this does it all !

X.

Not that I bid you spare her the pain ;  
Let death be felt and the proof remain :  
Brand, burn up, bite into its grace—  
He is sure to remember her dying face !

XI.

Is it done ? Take my mask off ! Nay, be not morose ;  
It kills her, and this prevents seeing it close :  
The delicate droplet, my whole fortune's fee !  
If it hurts her, beside, can it ever hurt me ?

XII.

Now, take all my jewels, gorge gold to your fill,  
You may kiss me, old man, on my mouth if you will !  
But brush this dust off me, lest horror it brings  
Ere I know it—next moment I dance at the King's !

## THE CONFESSIONAL.

[SPAIN.]

## I.

IT is a lie—their Priests, their Pope,  
Their Saints, their . . . all they fear or hope  
Are lies, and lies—there ! through my door  
And ceiling, there ! and walls and floor,  
There, lies, they lie—shall still be hurled  
Till spite of them I reach the world !

## II.

You think Priests just and holy men !  
Before they put me in this den  
I was a human creature too,  
With flesh and blood like one of you,  
A girl that laughed in beauty's pride  
Like lilies in your world outside.

## III.

I had a lover—shame avaunt !  
This poor wrenched body, grim and gaunt,  
Was kissed all over till it burned,  
By lips the truest, love e'er turned  
His heart's own tint : one night they kissed  
My soul out in a burning mist.

IV.

So, next day when the accustomed train  
Of things grew round my sense again,  
“That is a sin,” I said : and slow  
With downcast eyes to church I go,  
And pass to the confession-chair,  
And tell the old mild father there.

V.

But when I falter Beltran’s name,  
“Ha?” quoth the father; “much I blame  
“The sin; yet wherefore idly grieve?  
“Despair not—strenuously retrieve!  
“Nay, I will turn this love of thine  
“To lawful love, almost divine,

VI.

“For he is young, and led astray,  
“This Beltran, and he schemes, men say,  
“To change the laws of church and state;  
“So, thine shall be an angel’s fate,  
“Who, ere the thunder breaks, should roll  
“Its cloud away and save his soul.

VII.

“For, when he lies upon thy breast,  
“Thou mayst demand and be possessed  
“Of all his plans, and next day steal  
“To me, and all those plans reveal,  
“That I and every priest, to purge  
“His soul, may fast and use the scourge.”

## VIII.

That father's beard was long and white,  
With love and truth his brow seemed bright ;  
I went back, all on fire with joy,  
And, that same evening, bade the boy,  
Tell me, as lovers should, heart-free,  
Something to prove his love of me.

## IX.

He told me what he would not tell  
For hope of heaven or fear of hell ;  
And I lay listening in such pride !  
And, soon as he had left my side,  
Tripped to the church by morning-light  
To save his soul in his despite.

## X.

I told the father all his schemes,  
Who were his comrades, what their dreams ;  
“ And now make haste,” I said, “ to pray  
“ The one spot from his soul away ;  
“ To-night he comes, but not the same  
“ Will look !” At night he never came.

## XI.

Nor next night : on the after-morn,  
I went forth with a strength new-born.  
The church was empty ; something drew  
My steps into the street ; I knew  
It led me to the market-place :  
Where, lo, on high, the father's face !

XII.

That horrible black scaffold dressed,  
That stapled block . . God sink the rest !  
That head strapped back, that blinding vest,  
Those knotted hands and naked breast,  
Till near one busy hangman pressed,  
And, on the neck these arms caressed. . . .

XIII.

No part in aught they hope or fear !  
No heaven with them, no hell !—and here,  
No earth, not so much space as pens  
My body in their worst of dens  
But shall bear God and man my cry,  
Lies—lies, again—and still, they lie !

---

CRISTINA.

I.

SHE should never have looked at me  
If she meant I should not love her !  
There are plenty . . men, you call such,  
I suppose . . she may discover  
All her soul to, if she pleases,  
And yet leave much as she found them :  
But I 'm not so, and she knew it  
When she fixed me, glancing round them.

## II.

What? To fix me thus meant nothing?  
But I can't tell (there's my weakness)  
What her look said!—no vile cant, sure,  
About "need to strew the bleakness  
"Of some lone shore with its pearl-seed,  
"That the sea feels"—no "strange yearning  
"That such souls have, most to lavish  
"Where there's chance of least returning."

## III.

Oh we're sunk enough here, God knows!  
But not quite so sunk that moments,  
Sure tho' seldom, are denied us,  
When the spirit's true endowments  
Stand out plainly from its false ones,  
And apprise it if pursuing  
Or the right way or the wrong way,  
To its triumph or undoing.

## IV.

There are flashes struck from midnights,  
There are fire-flames noondays kindle,  
Whereby piled-up honours perish,  
Whereby swollen ambitions dwindle,  
While just this or that poor impulse  
Which for once had play unstified  
Seems the sole work of a life-time  
That away the rest have trifled.

v.

Doubt you if, in some such moment,  
 As she fixed me, she felt clearly,  
 Ages past the soul existed,  
 Here an age 't is resting merely,  
 And hence fleets again for ages,  
 While the true end, sole and single,  
 It stops here for is, this love-way,  
 With some other soul to mingle?

vi.

Else it loses what it lived for,  
 And eternally must lose it;  
 Better ends may be in prospect,  
 Deeper blisses (if you choose it),  
 But this life's end and this love-bliss  
 Have been lost here. Doubt you whether  
 This she felt as, looking at me,  
 Mine and her souls rushed together?

vii.

Oh, observe! Of course, next moment,  
 The world's honours, in derision,  
 Trampled out the light for ever:  
 Never fear but there's provision  
 Of the devil's to quench knowledge  
 Lest we walk the earth in rapture!  
 —Making those who catch God's secret  
 Just so much more prize their capture!

## VIII.

Such am I : the secret 's mine now !

She has lost me, I have gained her ;

Her soul 's mine : and thus, grown perfect,

I shall pass my life's remainder.

Life will just hold out the proving

Both our powers, alone and blended :

And then, come the next life quickly !

This world's use will have been ended.

---

THE LOST MISTRESS.

## I.

ALL 's over, then : does truth sound bitter

As one at first believes ?

Hark, 't is the sparrows' good-night twitter

About your cottage eaves !

## II.

And the leaf-buds on the vine are woolly,

I noticed that, to-day ;

One day more bursts them open fully

—You know the red turns grey.

## III.

To-morrow we meet the same then, dearest ?

May I take your hand in mine ?

Mere friends are we,—well, friends the merest

Keep much that I resign :



IV.

For each glance of the eye so bright and black,  
 Though I keep with heart's endeavour,—  
 Your voice, when you wish the snowdrops back,  
 Though it stay in my soul for ever!—

V.

Yet I will but say what mere friends say,  
 Or only a thought stronger ;  
 I will hold your hand but as long as all may,  
 Or so very little longer !

EARTH'S IMMORTALITIES.

FAME.

SEE, as the prettiest graves will do in time,  
 Our poet's wants the freshness of its prime ;  
 Spite of the sexton's browsing horse, the sods  
 Have struggled through its binding osier rods ;  
 Headstone and half-sunk footstone lean awry,  
 Wanting the brick-work promised by-and-by ;  
 How the minute grey lichens, plate o'er plate,  
 Have softened down the crisp-cut name and date !

LOVE.

So, the year's done with !  
*(Love me for ever !)*

All March begun with,  
April's endeavour ;  
May-wreaths that bound me  
June needs must sever ;  
Now snows fall round me,  
Quenching June's fever—  
(*Love me for ever !*)

---

## MEETING AT NIGHT.

## I.

THE grey sea and the long black land ;  
And the yellow half-moon large and low ;  
And the startled little waves that leap  
In fiery ringlets from their sleep,  
As I gain the cove with pushing prow,  
And quench its speed i' the slushy sand.

## II.

Then a mile of warm sea-scented beach ;  
Three fields to cross till a farm appears ;  
A tap at the pane, the quick sharp scratch  
And blue spurt of a lighted match,  
And a voice less loud, thro' its joys and fears,  
'Than the two hearts beating each to each !

---

PARTING AT MORNING.

ROUND the cape of a sudden came the sea,  
And the sun looked over the mountain's rim :  
And straight was a path of gold for him,  
And the need of a world of men for me.

---

SONG.

I.

NAY but you, who do not love her,  
Is she not pure gold, my mistress?  
Holds earth aught—speak truth—above her?  
Aught like this tress, see, and this tress,  
And this last fairest tress of all,  
So fair, see, ere I let it fall?

II.

Because, you spend your lives in praising ;  
To praise, you search the wide world over :  
Then why not witness, calmly gazing,  
If earth holds aught—speak truth—above her?  
Above this tress, and this, I touch  
But cannot praise, I love so much !

---

## A WOMAN'S LAST WORD.

## I.

LET 's contend no more, Love,  
Strive nor weep :  
All be as before, Love,  
—Only sleep !

## II.

What so wild as words are ?  
I and thou  
In debate, as birds are,  
Hawk on bough !

## III.

See the creature stalking  
While we speak !  
Hush and hide the talking,  
Cheek on cheek !

## IV.

What so false as truth is,  
False to thee ?  
Where the serpent's tooth is,  
Shun the tree—

## V.

Where the apple reddens  
Never pry—  
Lest we lose our Edens,  
Eve and I.

VI.

Be a god and hold me  
 With a charm !  
 Be a man and fold me  
 With thine arm !

VII.

Teach me, only teach, Love !  
 As I ought  
 I will speak thy speech, Love,  
 Think thy thought—

VIII.

Meet, if thou require it,  
 Both demands,  
 Laying flesh and spirit  
 In thy hands.

IX.

That shall be to-morrow  
 Not to-night :  
 I must bury sorrow  
 Out of sight :

X.

—Must a little weep, Love,  
 (Foolish me !)  
 And so fall asleep, Love,  
 Loved by thee.

---

## EVELYN HOPE.

## I.

BEAUTIFUL Evelyn Hope is dead !  
Sit and watch by her side an hour.  
That is her book-shelf, this her bed ;  
She plucked that piece of geranium-flower,  
Beginning to die too, in the glass ;  
Little has yet been changed, I think :  
The shutters are shut, no light may pass  
Save two long rays thro' the hinge's chink.

## II.

Sixteen years old when she died !  
Perhaps she had scarcely heard my name ;  
It was not her time to love ; beside,  
Her life had many a hope and aim,  
Duties enough and little cares,  
And now was quiet, now astir,  
Till God's hand beckoned unawares,—  
And the sweet white brow is all of her.

## III.

Is it too late then, Evelyn Hope ?  
What, your soul was pure and true,  
The good stars met in your horoscope,  
Made you of spirit, fire and dew—  
And, just because I was thrice as old  
And our paths in the world diverged so wide,  
Each was nought to each, must I be told ?  
We were fellow mortals, nought beside ?

IV.

No, indeed ! for God above

Is great to grant, as mighty to make,  
And creates the love to reward the love :

I claim you still, for my own love's sake !  
Delayed it may be for more lives yet,

Through worlds I shall traverse, not a few :  
Much is to learn, much to forget

Ere the time be come for taking you.

V.

But the time will come,—at last it will,

When, Evelyn Hope, what meant (I shall say)  
In the lower earth, in the years long still,

That body and soul so pure and gay ?  
Why your hair was amber, I shall divine,

And your mouth of your own geranium's red—  
And what you would do with me, in fine,

In the new life come in the old one's stead.

VI.

I have lived (I shall say) so much since then,

Given up myself so many times,  
Gained me the gains of various men,

Ransacked the ages, spoiled the climes ;  
Yet one thing, one, in my soul's full scope,

Either I missed or itself missed me :  
And I want and find you, Evelyn Hope !

What is the issue ? let us see !

## VII.

I loved you, Evelyn, all the while !

My heart seemed full as it could hold ?

There was place and to spare for the frank young smile,  
And the red young mouth, and the hair's young gold.

So, hush,—I will give you this leaf to keep :

See, I shut it inside the sweet cold hand !

There, that is our secret : go to sleep !

You will wake, and remember, and understand.

---

LOVE AMONG THE RUINS. ✓

## I.

WHERE the quiet-coloured end of evening smiles  
Miles and miles

On the solitary pastures where our sheep  
Half-asleep

Tinkle homeward thro' the twilight, stray or stop  
As they crop—

Was the site once of a city great and gay,  
(So they say)

Of our country's very capital, its prince  
Ages since

Held his court in, gathered councils, wielding far  
Peace or war.

## II.

Now,—the country does not even boast a tree,  
As you see,



To distinguish slopes of verdure, certain rills  
 From the hills  
 Intersect and give a name to, (else they run  
 Into one)  
 Where the domed and daring palace shot its spires  
 Up like fires  
 O'er the hundred-gated circuit of a wall  
 Bounding all,  
 Made of marble, men might march on nor be pressed,  
 Twelve abreast.

III.

And such plenty and perfection, see, of grass  
 Never was !  
 Such a carpet as, this summer-time, o'erspreads  
 And embeds  
 Every vestige of the city, guessed alone,  
 Stock or stone—  
 Where a multitude of men breathed joy and woe  
 Long ago ;  
 Lust of glory pricked their hearts up, dread of shame  
 Struck them tame ;  
 And that glory and that shame alike, the gold  
 Bought and sold.

IV.

Now,—the single little turret that remains  
 On the plains,  
 By the caper overrooted, by the gourd  
 Overscored,

While the patching houseleek's head of blossom winks  
Through the chinks—  
Marks the basement whence a tower in ancient time  
Sprang sublime,  
And a burning ring, all round, the chariots traced  
As they raced,  
And the monarch and his minions and his dames  
Viewed the games.

## v.

And I know, while thus the quiet-coloured eve  
Smiles to leave  
To their folding, all our many tinkling fleece  
In such peace,  
And the slopes and rills in undistinguished grey  
Melt away—  
That a girl with eager eyes and yellow hair  
Waits me there  
In the turret whence the charioteers caught soul  
For the goal,  
When the king looked, where she looks now, breathless,  
dumb  
Till I come.

## vi.

But he looked upon the city, every side,  
Far and wide,  
All the mountains topped with temples, all the glades'  
Colonnades,

All the causeys, bridges, aqueducts,—and then,  
 All the men !  
 When I do come, she will speak not, she will stand,  
 Either hand  
 On my shoulder, give her eyes the first embrace  
 Of my face,  
 Ere we rush, ere we extinguish sight and speech  
 Each on each.

VII.

In one year they sent a million fighters forth  
 South and North,  
 And they built their gods a brazen pillar high  
 As the sky,  
 Yet reserved a thousand chariots in full force—  
 Gold, of course.  
 Oh heart ! oh blood that freezes, blood that burns !  
 Earth's returns  
 For whole centuries of folly, noise and sin !  
 Shut them in,  
 With their triumphs and their glories and the rest !  
 Love is best.

---

A LOVERS' QUARREL.

I.

OH, what a dawn of day !  
 How the March sun feels like May !  
 All is blue again  
 After last night's rain,

And the South dries the hawthorn-spray  
Only, my Love's away !  
I 'd as lief that the blue were grey.

## II.

Runnels, which rillels swell,  
Must be dancing down the dell,  
With a foaming head  
On the beryl bed  
Paven smooth as a hermit's cell ;  
Each with a tale to tell,  
Could my Love but attend as well.

## III.

Dearest, three months ago !  
When we lived blocked-up with snow,—  
When the wind would edge  
In and in his wedge,  
In, as far as the point could go—  
Not to our ingle, though,  
Where we loved each the other so !

## IV.

Laughs with so little cause !  
We devised games out of straws.  
We would try and trace  
One another's face  
In the ash, as an artist draws ;  
Free on each other's flaws,  
How we chattered like two church daws !

V.

What 's in the "Times"—a scold  
 At the Emperor deep and cold ;  
     He has taken a bride  
     To his gruesome side,  
 That 's as fair as himself is bold :  
     There they sit ermine-stoled,  
 And she powders her hair with gold.

VI.

Fancy the Pampas' sheen !  
 Miles and miles of gold and green  
     Where the sunflowers blow  
     In a solid glow,  
 And to break now and then the screen—  
     Black neck and eyeballs keen,  
 Up a wild horse leaps between !

VII.

Try, will our table turn ?  
 Lay your hands there light, and yearn  
     Till the yearning slips  
     Thro' the finger-tips  
 In a fire which a few discern,  
     And a very few feel burn,  
 And the rest, they may live and learn !

VIII.

Then we would up and pace,  
 For a change, about the place,

Each with arm o'er neck :  
'T is our quarter-deck,  
We are seamen in woeful case.  
Help in the ocean-space !  
Or, if no help, we 'll embrace.

## IX.

See, how she looks now, dressed  
In a sledging-cap and vest !  
'T is a huge fur cloak—  
Like a reindeer's yoke  
Falls the lappet along the breast :  
Sleeves for her arms to rest,  
Or to hang, as my Love likes best.

## X.

Teach me to flirt a fan  
As the Spanish ladies can,  
Or I tint your lip  
With a burnt stick's tip  
And you turn into such a man !  
Just the two spots that span  
Half the bill of the young male swan.

## XI.

Dearest, three months ago  
When the mesmerizer Snow  
With his hand's first sweep  
Put the earth to sleep

'T was a time when the heart could show  
     All—how was earth to know,  
 'Neath the mute hand's to-and-fro ?

XII.

Dearest, three months ago  
 When we loved each other so,  
     Lived and loved the same  
     Till an evening came  
 When a shaft from the devil's bow  
     Pierced to our ingle-glow,  
 And the friends were friend and foe !

XIII.

Not from the heart beneath—  
 'T was a bubble born of breath,  
     Neither sneer nor vaunt,  
     Nor reproach nor taunt.  
 See a word, how it severeth !  
     Oh, power of life and death  
 In the tongue, as the Preacher saith !

XIV.

Woman, and will you cast  
 For a word, quite off at last  
     Me, your own, your You,—  
     Since, as truth is true,  
 I was You all the happy past—  
     Me do you leave aghast  
 With the memories We amassed ?

## XV.

Love, if you knew the light  
That your soul casts in my sight,  
    How I look to you  
    For the pure and true,  
And the beauteous and the right,—  
    Bear with a moment's spite  
When a mere mote threatens the white !

## XVI.

What of a hasty word ?  
Is the fleshly heart not stirred  
    By a worm's pin-prick  
    Where its roots are quick ?  
See the eye, by a fly's-foot blurred—  
    Ear, when a straw is heard  
Scratch the brain's coat of curd !

## XVII.

Foul be the world or fair  
More or less, how can I care ?  
    'T is the world the same  
    For my praise or blame,  
And endurance is easy there.  
    Wrong in the one thing rare—  
Oh, it is hard to bear !

## XVIII.

Here 's the spring back or close,  
When the almond-blossom blows .



We shall have the word  
 In a minor third  
 There is none but the cuckoo knows :  
     Heaps of the guelder-rose !  
 I must bear with it, I suppose.

XIX.

Could but November come,  
 Were the noisy birds struck dumb  
     At the warning slash  
     Of his driver's-lash—  
 I would laugh like the valiant Thumb  
     Facing the castle glum  
 And the giant's fee-faw-fum !

XX.

Then, were the world well stripped  
 Of the gear wherein equipped  
     We can stand apart,  
     Heart dispense with heart  
 In the sun, with the flowers unnipped,—  
     Oh, the world's hangings ripped,  
 We were both in a bare-walled crypt !

XXI.

Each in the crypt would cry  
 “ But one freezes here ! and why ?  
     “ When a heart, as chill,  
     “ At my own would thrill

" Back to life, and its fires out-fly ?

" Heart, shall we live or die ?

" The rest, . . . settle by and by !"

XXII.

So, she 'd efface the score,

And forgive me as before.

It is twelve o'clock :

I shall hear her knock

In the worst of a storm's uproar,

I shall pull her through the door

I shall have her for evermore !

---

UP AT A VILLA—DOWN IN THE CITY.

(AS DISTINGUISHED BY AN ITALIAN PERSON OF QUALITY.)

I.

HAD I but plenty of money, money enough and to spare,  
The house for me, no doubt, were a house in the city-  
square ;

Ah, such a life, such a life, as one leads at the window  
there !

II.

Something to see, by Bacchus, something to hear, at  
least !

There, the whole day long, one's life is a perfect feast ;  
While up at a villa one lives, I maintain it, no more than  
a beast.

III.

Well now, look at our villa ! stuck like the horn of a bull  
 Just on a mountain edge as bare as the creature's skull,  
 Save a mere shag of a bush with hardly a leaf to pull !  
 —I scratch my own, sometimes, to see if the hair's  
 turned wool.

IV.

But the city, oh the city—the square with the houses !  
 Why ?  
 They are stone-faced, white as a curd, there's something  
 to take the eye !  
 Houses in four straight lines, not a single front awry ;  
 You watch who crosses and gossips, who saunters, who  
 hurries by ;  
 Green blinds, as a matter of course, to draw when the  
 sun gets high ;  
 And the shops with fanciful signs which are painted  
 properly.

V.

What of a villa ? Though winter be over in March by  
 rights,  
 'T is May perhaps ere the snow shall have withered well  
 off the heights :  
 You've the brown ploughed land before, where the oxen  
 steam and wheeze,  
 And the hills over-smoked behind by the faint grey olive-  
 trees.

## VI.

Is it better in May, I ask you? You 've summer all at  
once;  
In a day he leaps complete with a few strong April suns.  
'Mid the sharp short emerald wheat, scarce risen three  
fingers well,  
The wild tulip, at end of its tube, blows out its great red  
bell  
Like a thin clear bubble of blood, for the children to pick  
and sell.

## VII.

Is it ever hot in the square? There 's a fountain to  
spout and splash!  
In the shade it sings and springs; in the shine such foam-  
bows flash  
On the horses with curling fish-tails, that prance and  
paddle and pash  
Round the lady atop in her conch—fifty gazers do not  
abash,  
Though all that she wears is some weeds round her waist  
in a sort of sash.

## VIII.

All the year long at the villa, nothing to see though you  
linger,  
Except yon cypress that points like death's lean lifted  
forefinger.

Some think fireflies pretty, when they mix i' the corn  
and mingle,  
Or thrid the stinking hemp till the stalks of it seem  
a-tingle.  
Late August or early September, the stunning cicala is  
shrill,  
And the bees keep their tiresome whine round the  
resinous firs on the hill.  
Enough of the seasons,—I spare you the months of the  
fever and chill.

IX.

Ere you open your eyes in the city, the blessed church-  
bells begin :  
No sooner the bells leave off than the diligence rattles  
in :  
You get the pick of the news, and it costs you never a  
pin.  
By and by there's the travelling doctor gives pills, lets  
blood, draws teeth ;  
Or the Pulcinello-trumpet breaks up the market beneath.  
At the post-office such a scene-picture—the new play,  
piping hot !  
And a notice how, only this morning, three liberal thieves  
were shot.  
Above it, behold the Archbishop's most fatherly of rebukes,  
And beneath, with his crown and his lion, some little new  
law of the Duke's !

Or a sonnet with flowery marge, to the Reverend Don  
So-and-so  
Who is Dante, Boccaccio, Petrarca, Saint Jerome and  
Cicero,  
“ And moreover,” (the sonnet goes rhyming,) “ the skirts  
of Saint Paul has reached,  
“ Having preached us those six Lent-lectures more  
unctuous than ever he preached.”  
Noon strikes,—here sweeps the procession ! our Lady  
borne smiling and smart  
With a pink gauze gown all spangles, and seven swords  
stuck in her heart !  
*Bang-whang-whang* goes the drum, *tootle-te-tootle* the fife ;  
No keeping one’s haunches still : it’s the greatest pleasure  
in life.

## x.

But bless you, it’s dear—it’s dear ! fowls, wine, at  
double the rate.  
They have clapped a new tax upon salt, and what oil  
pays passing the gate  
It’s a horror to think of. And so, the villa for me, not  
the city !  
Beggars can scarcely be choosers : but still—ah, the pity,  
the pity !  
Look, two and two go the priests, then the monks with  
cowls and sandals,  
And the penitents dressed in white shirts, a-holding the  
yellow candles ;

One, he carries a flag up straight, and another a cross  
with handles,

And the Duke's guard brings up the rear, for the better  
prevention of scandals :

*Bang-whang-whang* goes the drum, *tootle-te-tootle* the fife.

Oh, a day in the city-square, there is no such pleasure in  
life !

### A TOCCATA OF GALUPPI'S.

#### I.

OH Galuppi, Baldassarò, this is very sad to find !

I can hardly misconceive you ; it would prove me deaf  
and blind ;

But although I take your meaning, 't is with such a heavy  
mind !

#### II.

Here you come with your old music, and here 's all the  
good it brings.

What, they lived once thus at Venice where the merchants  
were the kings,

Where St. Mark's is, where the Doges used to wed the  
sea with rings ?

#### III.

Ay, because the sea 's the street there ; and 't is arched  
by . . . what you call

. . . Shylock's bridge with houses on it, where they kept  
the carnival :

I was never out of England— it 's as if I saw it all.

## IV.

Did young people take their pleasure when the sea was  
warm in May?  
Balls and masks begun at midnight, burning ever to mid-  
day  
When they made up fresh adventures for the morrow, do  
you say?

## V.

Was a lady such a lady, cheeks so round and lips so  
red,—  
On her neck the small face buoyant, like a bell-flower on  
its bed,  
O'er the breast's superb abundance where a man might  
base his head?

## VI.

Well, and it was graceful of them—they'd break talk off  
and afford  
—She, to bite her mask's black velvet, he, to finger on  
his sword,  
While you sat and played Toccatas, stately at the clavi-  
chord?

## VII.

What? Those lesser thirds so plaintive, sixths diminished,  
sigh on sigh,  
Told them something? Those suspensions, those solu-  
tions—"Must we die?"  
Those commiserating sevenths—"Life might last! we  
can but try!"



VIII.

"Were you happy?"—"Yes."—"And are you still as happy?"—"Yes. And you?"  
—"Then, more kisses!"—"Did *I* stop them, when a million seemed so few?"

Hark, the dominant's persistence till it must be answered to!

IX.

So, an octave struck the answer. Oh, they praised you,  
I dare say!

"Brave Galuppi! that was music! good alike at grave  
and gay!"

"I can always leave off talking when I hear a master  
play!"

X.

Then they left you for their pleasure: till in due time,  
one by one,

Some with lives that came to nothing, some with deeds  
as well undone,

Death stepped tacitly and took them where they never  
see the sun.

XI.

But when I sit down to reason, think to take my stand  
nor swerve,

While I triumph o'er a secret wrung from nature's close  
reserve,

In you come with your cold music till I creep thro' every  
nerve.

## XII.

Yes, you, like a ghostly cricket, creaking where a house  
was burned :

“ Dust and ashes, dead and done with, Venice spent what  
Venice earned.

“ The soul, doubtless, is immortal—where a soul can be  
discerned.

## XIII.

“ Yours for instance, you know physics, something of  
geology,

“ Mathematics are your pastime ; souls shall rise in their  
degree ;

“ Butterflies may dread extinction,—you ’ll not die, it  
cannot be !

## XIV.

“ As for Venice and her people, merely born to bloom  
and drop,

“ Here on earth they bore their fruitage, mirth and folly  
were the crop :

“ What of soul was left, I wonder, when the kissing had  
to stop ?

## XV.

“ Dust and ashes ! ” So you creak it, and I want the  
heart to scold.

Dear dead women, with such hair, too—what ’s become  
of all the gold

Used to hang and brush their bosoms ? I feel chilly and  
grown old.

OLD PICTURES IN FLORENCE.

I.

THE morn when first it thunders in March,  
The eel in the pond gives a leap, they say :  
As I leaned and looked over the aloed arch  
Of the villa-gate this warm March day,  
No flash snapped, no dumb thunder rolled  
In the valley beneath where, white and wide  
And washed by the morning water-gold,  
Florence lay out on the mountain-side.

II.

River and bridge and street and square  
Lay mine, as much at my beck and call,  
Through the live translucent bath of air,  
As the sights in a magic crystal ball.  
And of all I saw and of all I praised,  
The most to praise and the best to see,  
Was the startling bell-tower Giotto raised :  
But why did it more than startle me ?

III.

Giotto, how, with that soul of yours,  
Could you play me false who loved you so ?  
Some slights if a certain heart endures  
Yet it feels, I would have your fellows know !  
I' faith, I perceive not why I should care  
To break a silence that suits them best,  
But the thing grows somewhat hard to bear  
When I find a Giotto join the rest.

## IV.

On the arch where olives overhead  
Print the blue sky with twig and leaf,  
(That sharp-curved leaf which they never shed)  
'Twixt the aloes, I used to lean in chief,  
And mark through the winter afternoons,  
By a gift God grants me now and then,  
In the mild decline of those suns like moons,  
Who walked in Florence, besides her men.

## V.

They might chirp and chaffer, come and go  
For pleasure or profit, her men alive—  
My business was hardly with them, I trow,  
But with empty cells of the human hive;  
—With the chapter-room, the cloister-porch,  
The church's apsis, aisle or nave,  
Its crypt, one fingers along with a torch,  
Its face set full for the sun to shave.

## VI.

Wherever a fresco peels and drops,  
Wherever an outline weakens and wanes  
Till the latest life in the painting stops,  
Stands One whom each fainter pulse-tick pains:  
One, wishful each scrap should clutch the brick,  
Each tinge not wholly escape the plaster,  
—A lion who dies of an ass's kick,  
The wronged great soul of an ancient Master.

VII.

For oh, this world and the wrong it does !

They are safe in heaven with their backs to it,  
The Michaels and Rafaels, you hum and buzz

Round the works of, you of the little wit !  
Do their eyes contract to the earth's old scope,  
Now that they see God face to face,  
And have all attained to be poets, I hope ?  
'T is their holiday now, in any case.

VIII.

Much they reckon of your praise and you !

But the wronged great souls—can they be quit  
Of a world where their work is all to do,

Where you style them, you of the little wit,  
Old Master This and Early the Other,  
Not dreaming that Old and New are fellows :  
A younger succeeds to an elder brother,  
Da Vincis derive in good time from Dellos.

IX.

And here where your praise might yield returns,

And a handsome word or two give help,  
Here, after your kind, the mastiff girns  
And the puppy pack of poodles yelp.

What, not a word for Stefano there,  
Of brow once prominent and starry,  
Called Nature's Ape and the world's despair  
For his peerless painting? (see Vasari.)

## X.

There stands the Master. Study, my friends,  
What a man's work comes to ! So he plans it,  
Performs it, perfects it, makes amends  
For the toiling and moiling, and then, *sic transit* !  
Happier the thrifty blind-folk labour,  
With upturned eye while the hand is busy,  
Not sidling a glance at the coin of their neighbour !  
'T is looking downward that makes one dizzy.

## XI.

“ If you knew their work you would deal your dole.”  
May I take upon me to instruct you ?  
When Greek Art ran and reached the goal,  
Thus much had the world to boast *in fructu*—  
The Truth of Man, as by God first spoken,  
Which the actual generations garble,  
Was re-uttered, and Soul (which Limbs betoken)  
And Limbs (Soul informs) made new in marble.

## XII.

So, you saw yourself as you wished you were,  
As you might have been, as you cannot be ;  
Earth here, rebuked by Olympus there :  
And grew content in your poor degree  
With your little power, by those statues' godhead,  
And your little scope, by their eyes' full sway,  
And your little grace, by their grace embodied,  
And your little date, by their forms that stay.

XIII.

You would fain be kinglier, say, than I am ?  
 Even so, you will not sit like Theseus.  
 You would prove a model ? The Son of Priam  
 Has yet the advantage in arms' and knees' use.  
 You 're wroth—can you slay your snake like Apollo ?  
 You 're grieved—still Niobe 's the grander !  
 You live—there 's the Racers' frieze to follow :  
 You die—there 's the dying Alexander.

XIV.

So, testing your weakness by their strength,  
 Your meagre charms by their rounded beauty,  
 Measured by Art in your breadth and length,  
 You learned—to submit is a mortal's duty.  
 —When I say “you” 't is the common soul,  
 The collective, I mean : the race of Man  
 That receives life in parts to live in a whole,  
 And grow here according to God's clear plan.

XV.

Growth came when, looking your last on them all,  
 You turned your eyes inwardly one fine day  
 And cried with a start—What if we so small  
 Be greater and grander the while than they ?  
 Are they perfect of lineament, perfect of stature ?  
 In both, of such lower types are we  
 Precisely because of our wider nature ;  
 For time, theirs—ours, for eternity.

## XVI.

To-day's brief passion limits their range ;  
It seethes with the morrow for us and more.  
They are perfect—how else ? they shall never change :  
We are faulty—why not ? we have time in store.  
The Artificer's hand is not arrested  
With us ; we are rough-hewn, no-wise polished :  
They stand for our copy, and, once invested  
With all they can teach, we shall see them abolished.

## XVII.

T is a life-long toil till our lump be leaven—  
The better ! What 's come to perfection perishes.  
Things learned on earth, we shall practise in heaven :  
Works done least rapidly, Art most cherishes.  
Thyself shalt afford the example, Giotto !  
Thy one work, not to decrease or diminish,  
Done at a stroke, was just (was it not ?) " O !"  
Thy great Campanile is still to finish.

## XVIII.

Is it true that we are now, and shall be hereafter,  
But what and where depend on life's minute ?  
Hails heavenly cheer or infernal laughter  
Our first step out of the gulf or in it ?  
Shall Man, such step within his endeavour,  
Man's face, have no more play and action  
Than joy which is crystallized for ever,  
Or grief, an eternal petrification ?



XIX.

On which I conclude, that the early painters,  
 To cries of "Greek Art and what more wish you?"—  
 Replied, "To become now self-acquainters,  
 " And paint man, man, whatever the issue !  
 " Make new hopes shine through the flesh they fray,  
 " New fears aggrandise the rags and tatters :  
 " To bring the invisible full into play !  
 " Let the visible go to the dogs—what matters ?"

XX.

Give these, I exhort you, their guerdon and glory  
 For daring so much, before they well did it.  
 The first of the new, in our race's story,  
 Beats the last of the old ; 't is no idle quiddit.  
 The worthies began a revolution,  
 Which if on earth you intend to acknowledge,  
 Why, honour them now ! (ends my allocution)  
 Nor confer your degree when the folks leave college.

XXI.

There 's a fancy some lean to and others hate—  
 That, when this life is ended, begins  
 New work for the soul in another state,  
 Where it strives and gets weary, loses and wins :  
 Where the strong and the weak, this world's congeries,  
 Repeat in large what they practised in small,  
 Through life after life in unlimited series ;  
 Only the scale 's to be changed, that 's all.

## XXII.

Yet I hardly know. When a soul has seen  
 By the means of Evil that Good is best,  
 And, through earth and its noise, what is heaven's  
 serene,—

When our faith in the same has stood the test—  
 Why, the child grown man, you burn the rod,  
 The uses of labour are surely done ;  
 There remaineth a rest for the people of God :  
 And I have had troubles enough, for one.

## XXIII.

But at any rate I have loved the season  
 Of Art's spring-birth so dim and dewy ;  
 My sculptor is Nicolo the Pisan,  
 My painter—who but Cimabue ?  
 Nor ever was man of them all indeed,  
 From these to Ghiberti and Ghirlandajo,  
 Could say that he missed my critic-meed.  
 So, now to my special grievance—heigh ho !

## XXIV.

Their ghosts still stand, as I said before,  
 Watching each fresco flaked and rasped,  
 Blocked up, knocked out, or whitewashed o'er :  
 —No getting again what the church has grasped !  
 The works on the wall must take their chance ;  
 “ Works never conceded to England's thick clime ! ”  
 (I hope they prefer their inheritance  
 Of a bucketful of Italian quick-lime.)

XXV.

When they go at length, with such a shaking  
 Of heads o'er the old delusion, sadly  
 Each master his way through the black streets taking,  
 Where many a lost work breathes though badly—  
 Why don't they bethink them of who has merited?  
 Why not reveal, while their pictures dree  
 Such doom, how a captive might be out-ferreted?  
 Why is it they never remember me?

XXVI.

Not that I expect the great Bigordi,  
 Nor Sandro to hear me, chivalric, bellicose;  
 Nor the wronged Lippino; and not a word I  
 Say of a scrap of Frà Angelico's:  
 But are you too fine, Taddeo Gaddi,  
 To grant me a taste of your intonaco,  
 Some Jerome that seeks the heaven with a sad eye?  
 Not a churlish saint, Lorenzo Monaco?

XXVII.

Could not the ghost with the close red cap,  
 My Pollajolo, the twice a craftsman,  
 Save me a sample, give me the hap  
 Of a muscular Christ that shows the draughtsman?  
 No Virgin by him the somewhat petty,  
 Of finical touch and tempera crumbly—  
 Could not Alesso Baldovinetti  
 Contribute so much, I ask him humbly?

## XXVIII.

Margheritone of Arezzo,  
With the grave-clothes garb and swaddling barret  
(Why purse up mouth and beak in a pet so,  
You bald old saturnine poll-clawed parrot ?)  
Not a poor glimmering Crucifixion,  
Where in the foreground kneels the donor ?  
If such remain, as is my conviction,  
The hoarding it does you but little honour.

## XXIX.

They pass ; for them the panels may thrill,  
The tempera grow alive and tinglish ;  
Their pictures are left to the mercies still  
Of dealers and stealers, Jews and the English  
Who, seeing mere money's worth in their prize,  
Will sell it to somebody calm as Zeno  
At naked High Art, and in ecstasies  
Before some clay-cold vile Carlino !

## XXX.

No matter for these ! But Giotto, you,  
Have you allowed, as the town-tongues babble it,  
Oh, never ! it shall not be counted true—  
That a certain precious little tablet  
Which Buonarroto eyed like a lover,—  
Was buried so long in oblivion's womb  
And, left for another than I to discover,  
Turns up at last ! and to whom ?—to whom ?

XXXI.

I, that have haunted the dim San Spirito,  
 (Or was it rather the Ognissanti?)  
 Patient on altar-step planting a weary toe !  
 Nay, I shall have it yet ! *Detur amanti !*  
 My Koh-i-noor—or (if that 's a platitude)  
 Jewel of Giamschid, the Persian Sofi's eye ;  
 So, in anticipative gratitude,  
 What if I take up my hope and prophesy ?

XXXII.

When the hour grows ripe, and a certain dotard  
 Is pitched, no parcel that needs invoicing,  
 To the worse side of the Mont St. Gothard,  
 We shall begin by way of rejoicing ;  
 None of that shooting the sky (blank cartridge),  
 Nor a civic guard, all plumes and lacquer,  
 Hunting Radetzky's soul like a partridge  
 Over Morello with squib and cracker.

XXXIII.

This time we 'll shoot better game and bag 'em hot  
 No mere display at the stone of Dante,  
 But a kind of sober Witanagemot  
 (Ex : " Casa Guidi," *quod videas ante*)  
 Shall ponder, once Freedom restored to Florence,  
 How Art may return that departed with her.  
 Go, hated house, go each trace of the Lorraine's,  
 And bring us the days of Orgagna hither !

## XXXIV.

How we shall prologuize, how we shall perorate,  
Utter fit things upon art and history,  
Feel truth at blood-heat and falsehood at zero rate,  
Make of the want of the age no mystery ;  
Contrast the fructuous and sterile eras,  
Show—monarchy ever its uncouth cub licks  
Out of the bear's shape into Chimæra's,  
While Pure Art's birth is still the republic's.

## XXXV.

Then one shall propose in a speech (curt Tuscan,  
Expurgate and sober, with scarcely an "*issimo*,")  
To end now our half-told tale of Cambuscan,  
And turn the bell-tower's *alt* to *altissimo* :  
And fine as the beak of a young beccaccia  
The Campanile, the Duomo's fit ally,  
Shall soar up in gold full fifty braccia,  
Completing Florence, as Florence, Italy.

## XXXVI.

Shall I be alive that morning the scaffold  
Is broken away, and the long-pent fire,  
Like the golden hope of the world, unbaffled  
Springs from its sleep, and up goes the spire  
While "God and the People" plain for its motto,  
Thence the new tricolour flaps at the sky ?  
At least to foresee that glory of Giotto  
And Florence together, the first am I !

“DE GUSTIBUS—”

I.

YOUR ghost will walk, you lover of trees,  
 (If our loves remain)  
 In an English lane,  
 By a cornfield-side a-flutter with poppies.  
 Hark, those two in the hazel coppice—  
 A boy and a girl, if the good fates please,  
 Making love, say,—  
 ‘The happier they !  
 Draw yourself up from the light of the moon,  
 And let them pass, as they will too soon,  
 With the beanflowers’ boon,  
 And the blackbird’s tune,  
 And May, and June !

II.

What I love best in all the world  
 Is a castle, precipice-encurled,  
 In a gash of the wind-grieved Apennine.  
 Or look for me, old fellow of mine,  
 (If I get my head from out the mouth  
 O’ the grave, and loose my spirit’s bands,  
 And come again to the land of lands)—  
 In a sea-side house to the farther South,  
 Where the baked cicala dies of drouth.

And one sharp tree—'t is a cypress—stands,  
By the many hundred years red-rusted,  
Rough iron-spiked, ripe fruit-o'ercrusted,  
My sentinel to guard the sands  
To the water's edge. For, what expands  
Before the house, but the great opaque  
Blue breadth of sea without a break ?  
While, in the house, for ever crumbles  
Some fragment of the frescoed walls,  
From blisters where a scorpion sprawls  
A girl bare-footed brings, and tumbles  
Down on the pavement, green-flesh melons,  
And says there 's news to-day—the king  
Was shot at, touched in the liver-wing,  
Goes with his Bourbon arm in a sling :  
—She hopes they have not caught the felons.  
Italy, my Italy !  
Queen Mary's saying serves for me—  
    (When fortune's malice  
    Lost her, Calais)  
Open my heart and you will see  
Graved inside of it, "Italy."  
Such lovers old are I and she :  
So it always was, so shall ever be !

---



# HOME-THOUGHTS, FROM ABROAD.

## I.

OH, to be in England  
 Now that April's there,  
 And whoever wakes in England  
 Sees, some morning, unaware,  
 That the lowest boughs and the brush-wood sheat  
 Round the elm-tree bole are in tiny leaf,  
 While the chaffinch sings on the orchard bough  
 In England—now !

## II.

And after April, when May follows,  
 And the whitethroat builds, and all the swallows !  
 Hark, where my blossomed pear-tree in the hedge  
 Leans to the field and scatters on the clover  
 Blossoms and dewdrops—at the bent spray's edge—  
 That's the wise thrush ; he sings each song twice over,  
 Lest you should think he never could recapture  
 The first fine careless rapture !  
 And though the fields look rough with hoary dew,  
 All will be gay when noontide wakes anew  
 The buttercups, the little children's dower  
 —Far brighter than this gaudy melon-flower !

## HOME-THOUGHTS, FROM THE SEA.

NOBLY, nobly Cape Saint Vincent to the North-West  
died away ;  
Sunset ran, one glorious blood-red, reeking into Cadiz  
Bay ;  
Bluish 'mid the burning water, full in face Trafalgar lay ;  
In the dimmest North-East distance dawned Gibraltar  
grand and gray ;  
“ Here and here did England help me : how can I help  
England ? ”—say,  
Whoso turns as I, this evening, turn to God to praise  
and pray,  
While Jove's planet rises yonder, silent over Africa

SAUL.

I.

SAID Abner, “ At last thou art come ! Ere I tell, ere  
thou speak,  
“ Kiss my cheek, wish me well ! ” Then I wished it, and  
did kiss his cheek.  
And he, “ Since the King, O my friend, for thy coun-  
tenance sent,  
“ Neither drunken nor eaten have we ; nor until from his  
tent

"Thou return with the joyful assurance the King liveth  
     yet,  
 "Shall our lip with the honey be bright, with the water be  
     wet.  
 "For out of the black mid-tent's silence, a space of three  
     days,  
 "Not a sound hath escaped to thy servants, of prayer nor  
     of praise,  
 "To betoken that Saul and the Spirit have ended their  
     strife,  
 "And that, faint in his triumph, the monarch sinks back  
     upon life.

II.

"Yet now my heart leaps, O beloved ! God's child with  
     his dew  
 "On thy gracious gold hair, and those lilies still living  
     and blue  
 "Just broken to twine round thy harp-strings, as if no  
     wild heat  
 "Were now raging to torture the desert ! "

III.

Then I, as was meet,  
 Knelt down to the God of my fathers, and rose on my  
     feet,  
 And ran o'er the sand burnt to powder. The tent was  
     unlooped ;  
 I pulled up the spear that obstructed, and under I  
     stooped ;

Hands and knees on the slippery grass-patch, all withered  
and gone,  
That extends to the second enclosure, I groped my  
way on  
Till I felt where the foldskirts fly open. Then once  
more I prayed,  
And opened the foldskirts and entered, and was not  
afraid  
But spoke, "Here is David, thy servant!" And no  
voice replied.  
At the first I saw nought but the blackness; but soon  
descried  
A something more black than the blackness—the vast  
the upright  
Main prop which sustains the pavilion: and slow into  
sight  
Grew a figure against it, gigantic and blackest of all.  
Then a sunbeam, that burst thro' the tent-roof, shewed  
Saul.

## IV.

He stood as erect as that tent-prop, both arms stretched  
out wide  
On the great cross-support in the centre, that goes to  
each side;  
He relaxed not a muscle, but hung there as, caught  
his pangs  
And waiting his change, the king-serpent all heavily  
hangs,

'Far away from his kind, in the pine, till deliverance come  
With the spring-time,—so agonized Saul, drear and stark,  
blind and dumb.

v.

'Then I tuned my harp,—took off the lilies we twine  
round its chords  
'Lest they snap 'neath the stress of the noontide—those  
sunbeams like swords !  
And I first played the tune all our sheep know, as, one  
after one,  
So docile they come to the pen-door till folding be done.  
They are white and untorn by the bushes, for lo, they  
have fed  
Where the long grasses stifle the water within the stream's  
bed ;  
'And now one after one seeks its lodging, as star follows  
star  
'Into eve and the blue far above us,—so blue and so far !

vi.

—Then the tune, for which quails on the cornland will  
each leave his mate  
To fly after the player ; then, what makes the crickets  
elate  
Till for boldness they fight one another : and then, what  
has weight  
To set the quick jerboa a-musing outside his sand house—  
There are none such as he for a wonder, half bird and  
half mouse !

God made all the creatures and gave them our love and  
our fear,  
To give sign, we and they are his children, one family here.

## VII.

Then I played the help-tune of our reapers, their wine-  
song, when hand  
Grasps at hand, eye lights eye in good friendship, and  
great hearts expand  
And grow one in the sense of this world's life.—And  
then, the last song  
When the dead man is praised on his journey—" Bear  
bear him along  
" With his few faults shut up like dead flowerets ! Are  
balm seeds not here  
" To console us ? The land has none left such as he on  
the bier.  
" Oh, would we might keep thee, my brother !"—And  
then, the glad chaunt  
Of the marriage,—first go the young maidens, next, she  
whom we vaunt  
As the beauty, the pride of our dwelling.—And then, the  
great march  
Wherein man runs to man to assist him and buttress an  
arch  
Nought can break ; who shall harm them, our friends ?—  
Then, the chorus intoned  
As the levites go up to the altar in glory enthroned.  
But I stopped here : for here in the darkness Saul groaned.

VIII.

And I paused, held my breath in such silence, and  
 listened apart ;  
 And the tent shook, for mighty Saul shuddered : and  
 sparkles 'gan dart  
 From the jewels that woke in his turban at once with a  
 start  
 All its lordly male-sapphires, and rubies courageous at  
 heart.  
 So the head : but the body still moved not, still hung  
 there erect.  
 And I bent once again to my playing, pursued it un-  
 checked,  
 As I sang,—

IX.

“ Oh, our manhood's prime vigour ! No  
 spirit feels waste,  
 “ Not a muscle is stopped in its playing nor sinew un-  
 braced.  
 “ Oh, the wild joys of living ! the leaping from rock up  
 to rock,  
 “ The strong rending of boughs from the fir-tree, the  
 cool silver shock  
 “ Of the plunge in a pool's living water, the hunt of the  
 bear,  
 “ And the sultriness showing the lion is couched in his  
 lair.

- “ And the meal, the rich dates yellowed over with gold  
dust divine,
- “ And the locust-flesh steeped in the pitcher, the full  
draught of wine,
- “ And the sleep in the dried river-channel where bulrushes  
tell \
- “ That the water was wont to go warbling so softly and  
well.
- “ How good is man’s life, the mere living ! how fit to  
employ
- “ All the heart and the soul and the senses for ever in joy !
- “ Hast thou loved the white locks of thy father, whose  
sword thou didst guard
- “ When he trusted thee forth with the armies, for glorious  
reward ?
- “ Didst thou see the thin hands of thy mother, held up as  
men sung
- “ The low song of the nearly-departed, and hear her faint  
tongue
- “ Joining in while it could to the witness, ‘ Let one more  
attest,
- “ ‘ I have lived, seen God’s hand thro’ a lifetime, and all  
was for best ! ’
- “ Then they sung thro’ their tears in strong triumph, not  
much, but the rest.
- “ And thy brothers, the help and the contest, the working  
whence grew
- “ Such result as, from seething grape-bundles, the spirit  
strained true :



- “ And the friends of thy boyhood—that boyhood of  
wonder and hope,  
“ Present promise and wealth of the future beyond the  
eye’s scope,—  
“ Till lo, thou art grown to a monarch ; a people is thine ;  
“ And all gifts, which the world offers singly, on one head  
combine !  
“ On one head, all the beauty and strength, love and rage  
(like the throe  
“ That, a-work in the rock, helps its labour and lets the  
gold go)  
“ High ambition and deeds which surpass it, fame  
crowning them,—all  
“ Brought to blaze on the head of one creature—King  
Saul !”

x.

And lo, with that leap of my spirit,—heart, hand, harp  
and voice,  
Each lifting Saul’s name out of sorrow, each bidding  
rejoice  
Saul’s fame in the light it was made for—as when, dare I  
say,  
The Lord’s army, in rapture of service, strains through  
its array,  
And upsoareth the cherubim-chariot—“ Saul !” cried I,  
and stopped,  
And waited the thing that should follow. Then Saul,  
who hung propped

By the tent's cross-support in the centre, was struck by  
his name.  
Have ye seen when Spring's arrowy summons goes right  
to the aim,  
And some mountain, the last to withstand her, that held  
(he alone,  
While the vale laughed in freedom and flowers) on a  
broad bust of stone  
A year's snow bound about for a breastplate,—leaves  
grasp of the sheet?  
Fold on fold all at once it crowds thunderously down to  
his feet,  
And there fronts you, stark, black, but alive yet, your  
mountain of old,  
With his rents, the successive bequeathings of ages untold—  
Yea, each harm got in fighting your battles, each furrow  
and scar  
Of his head thrust 'twixt you and the tempest—all hail,  
there they are !  
— Now again to be softened with verdure, again hold the  
nest  
Of the dove, tempt the goat and its young to the green  
on his crest  
For their food in the ardours of summer. One long  
shudder thrilled  
All the tent till the very air tingled, then sank and was  
stilled  
At the King's self left standing before me, released and  
aware.

What was gone, what remained? All to traverse 'twixt  
                    hope and despair,  
Death was past, life not come : so he waited. Awhile  
                    his right hand  
Held the brow, helped the eyes left too vacant forthwith  
                    to remand  
To their place what new objects should enter : 't was  
                    Saul as before.  
I looked up and dared gaze at those eyes, nor was hurt  
                    any more  
Than by slow pallid sunsets in autumn, ye watch from  
                    the shore,  
At their sad level gaze o'er the ocean—a sun's slow  
                    decline  
Over hills which, resolved in stern silencè, o'erlap and  
                    entwine  
Base with base to knit strength more intensely : so, arm  
                    folded arm  
O'er the chest whose slow heavings subsided.

XI.

What spell or what charm,  
(For, awhile there was trouble within me) what next  
should I urge  
To sustain him where song had restored him?—Song  
filled to the verge  
His cup with the wine of this life, pressing all that it  
yields  
Of mere fruitage, the strength and the beauty : beyond,  
on what fields,

Glean a vintage more potent and perfect to brighten  
the eye  
And bring blood to the lip, and commend them the cup  
they put by?  
He saith, "It is good;" still he drinks not: he lets me  
praise life,  
Gives assent, yet would die for his own part.

## XII.

Then fancies grew rife  
Which had come long ago on the pasture, when round  
me the sheep  
Fed in silence—above, the one eagle wheeled slow as in  
sleep;  
And I lay in my hollow and mused on the world that  
might lie  
'Neath his ken, though I saw but the strip 'twixt the  
hill and the sky:  
And I laughed—"Since my days are ordained to be  
passed with my flocks,  
" Let me people at least, with my fancies, the plains and  
the rocks,  
" Dream the life I am never to mix with, and image the  
show  
" Of mankind as they live in those fashions I hardly shall  
know!  
" Schemes of life, its best rules and right uses, the  
courage that gains,  
" And the prudence that keeps what men strive for."  
And now these old trains

Of vague thought came again ; I grew surer ; so, once  
   more the string  
 Of my harp made response to my spirit, as thus—

XIII.

“ Yea, my King,”

I began—“ thou dost well in rejecting mere comforts  
   that spring

“ From the mere mortal life held in common by man  
   and by brute :

“ In our flesh grows the branch of this life, in our soul  
   it bears fruit.

“ Thou hast marked the slow rise of the tree,—how its  
   stem trembled first

“ Till it passed the kid’s lip, the stag’s antler ; then  
   safely outburst

“ The fan-branches all round ; and thou mindest when  
   these too, in turn

“ Broke a-bloom and the palm-tree seemed perfect : yet  
   more was to learn,

“ E’en the good that comes in with the palm-fruit. Our  
   dates shall we slight,

“ When their juice brings a cure for all sorrow ? or care  
   for the plight

“ Of the palm’s self whose slow growth produced them ?  
   Not so ! stem and branch

“ Shall decay, nor be known in their place, while the  
   palm-wine shall staunch

“ Every wound of man’s spirit in winter. I pour thee  
   such wine.

- “ Leave the flesh to the fate it was fit for ! the spirit be  
thine !
- “ By the spirit, when age shall o’ercome thee, thou still  
shalt enjoy
- “ More indeed, than at first when unconscious, the life of  
a boy.
- “ Crush that life, and behold its wine running ! Each  
deed thou hast done
- “ Dies, revives, goes to work in the world ; until e’en as  
the sun
- “ Looking down on the earth, though clouds spoil him,  
though tempests efface,
- “ Can find nothing his own deed produced not, must  
everywhere trace
- “ The results of his past summer-prime,—so, each ray of  
thy will,
- “ Every flash of thy passion and prowess, long over, shall  
thrill
- “ Thy whole people the countless, with ardour, till they  
too give forth
- “ A like cheer to their sons, who in turn, fill the South  
and the North
- “ With the radiance thy deed was the germ of. Carouse  
in the past !
- “ But the license of age has its limit ; thou diest at  
last :
- “ As the lion when age dims his eyeball, the rose at her  
height,
- “ So with man—so his power and his beauty for ever  
take flight.

- ‘No! Again a long draught of my soul-wine! Look  
forth o’er the years!
- “Thou hast done now with eyes for the actual; begin  
with the seer’s!
- “Is Saul dead? In the depth of the vale make his tomb  
—bid arise
- “A grey mountain of marble heaped four-square, till,  
built to the skies,
- “Let it mark where the great First King slumbers:  
whose fame would ye know?
- “Up above see the rock’s naked face, where the record  
shall go
- “In great characters cut by the scribe,—Such was Saul,  
so he did;
- “With the sages directing the work, by the populace  
chid,—
- “For not half, they’ll affirm, is comprised there! Which  
fault to amend,
- “In the grove with his kind grows the cedar, whereon  
they shall spend
- “(See, in tablets ’t is level before them) their praise,  
and record
- “With the gold of the graver, Saul’s story,—the states-  
man’s great word
- “Side by side with the poet’s sweet comment. The  
river’s a-wave
- “With smooth paper-reeds grazing each other when  
prophet-winds rave:
- “So the pen gives unborn generations their due and  
their part

“ In thy being ! Then, first of the mighty, thank God  
that thou art ! ”

## XIV.

And behold while I sang . . but O Thou who didst grant  
me that day,  
And before it not seldom hast granted thy help to  
essay,  
Carry on and complete an adventure,—my shield and  
my sword  
In that act where my soul was thy servant, thy word was  
my word,—  
Still be with me, who then at the summit of human  
endeavour  
And scaling the highest, man's thought could, gazed  
hopeless as ever  
On the new stretch of heaven above me—till, mighty to  
save,  
Just one lift of thy hand cleared that distance—God's  
throne from man's grave !  
Let me tell out my tale to its ending—my voice to my  
heart  
Which can scarce dare believe in what marvels last night  
I took part,  
As this morning I gather the fragments, alone with my  
sheep,  
And still fear lest the terrible glory vanish like  
sleep !  
For I wake in the grey dewy covert, while Hebron  
upheaves



The dawn struggling with night on his shoulder, and  
 Kidron retrieves  
 Slow the damage of yesterday's sunshine.

xv.

I say then,—my song  
 While I sang thus, assuring the monarch, and ever more  
 strong  
 Made a proffer of good to console him—he slowly  
 resumed  
 His old motions and habitudes kingly. The right hand  
 replumed  
 His black locks to their wonted composure, adjusted the  
 swathes  
 Of his turban, and see—the huge sweat that his coun-  
 tenance bathes,  
 He wipes off with the robe ; and he girds now his loins  
 as of yore,  
 And feels slow for the armlets of price, with the clasp  
 set before.  
 He is Saul, ye remember in glory,—ere error had bent  
 The broad brow from the daily communion ; and still,  
 though much spent  
 Be the life and the bearing that front you, the same, God  
 did choose,  
 To receive what a man may waste, desecrate, never  
 quite lose.  
 So sank he along by the tent-prop till, stayed by the  
 pile

Of his armour and war-cloak and garments, he leaned  
there awhile,

And sat out my singing,—one arm round the tent-prop,  
to raise

His bent head, and the other hung slack—till I touched  
on the praise

I foresaw from all men in all time, to the man patient  
there ;

And thus ended, the harp falling forward. Then first I  
was 'ware

That he sat, as I say, with my head just above his vast  
knees

Which were thrust out on each side around me, like oak  
roots which please

To encircle a lamb when it slumbers. I looked up to  
know

If the best I could do had brought solace : he spoke  
not, but slow.

Lifted up the hand slack at his side, till he laid it with care  
Soft and grave, but in mild settled will, on my brow :  
thro' my hair

The large fingers were pushed, and he bent back my  
head, with kind power—

All my face back, intent to peruse it, as men do a  
flower.

Thus held he me there with his great eyes that scruti-  
nized mine—

And oh, all my heart how it loved him ! but where was  
the sign ?

I yearned—"Could I help thee, my father, inventing a  
bliss,

"I would add, to that life of the past, both the future  
and this ;

"I would give thee new life altogether, as good, ages  
hence,

"As this moment,—had love but the warrant, love's  
heart to dispense !"

XVI.

Then the truth came upon me. No harp more—no song  
more ! out-broke—

XVII.

"I have gone the whole round of creation : I saw and  
I spoke :

"I, a work of God's hand for that purpose, received in  
my brain

"And pronounced on the rest of his handwork—returned  
him again

"His creation's approval or censure : I spoke as I saw.

"I report, as a man may of God's work—all 's love, yet  
all 's law.

"Now I lay down the judgeship he lent me. Each  
faculty tasked

"To perceive him, has gained an abyss, where a dew-  
drop was asked.

"Have I knowledge ? confounded it shrivels at Wisdom  
laid bare.

"Have I forethought ? how purblind, how blank, to the  
Infinite Care !

" Do I task any faculty highest, to image success?

" I but open my eyes,—and perfection, no more and no  
less,

" In the kind I imagined, full-fronts me, and God is seen  
God

" In the star, in the stone, in the flesh, in the soul and  
the clod.

" And thus looking within and around me, I ever renew

" (With that stoop of the soul which in bending upraise  
it too)

" The submission of man's nothing-perfect to God's all  
complete,

" As by each new obeisance in spirit, I climb to his  
feet.

" Yet with all this abounding experience, this deity  
known,

" I shall dare to discover some province, some gift of my  
own.

" There 's a faculty pleasant to exercise, hard to hood-  
wink,

" I am fain to keep still in abeyance, (I laugh as I  
think)

" Lest, insisting to claim and parade in it, wot ye, I  
worst

" E'en the Giver in one gift.—Behold, I could love if  
I durst!

" But I sink the pretension as fearing a man may  
o'ertake

" God's own speed in the one way of love: I abstain for  
love's sake.

"—What, my soul? see thus far and no farther? when  
doors great and small,

" Nine-and-ninety flew ope at our touch, should the  
hundredth appal?

" In the least things have faith, yet distrust in the  
greatest of all?

" Do I find love so full in my nature, God's ultimate  
gift,

" That I doubt his own love can compete with it?  
Here, the parts shift?

" Here, the creature surpass the Creator,—the end, what  
Began?

" Would I fain in my impotent yearning do all for this  
man,

" And dare doubt he alone shall not help him, who yet  
alone can?

" Would it ever have entered my mind, the bare will,  
much less power,

" To bestow on this Saul what I sang of, the marvellous  
dower

" Of the life he was gifted and filled with? to make such  
a soul,

" Such a body, and then such an earth for insphering  
the whole?

" And doth it not enter my mind (as my warm tears  
attest)

" These good things being given, to go on, and give one  
more, the best?

" Ay, to save and redeem and restore him, maintain at  
the height

- “ This perfection,—succeed with life’s dayspring, death’s  
minute of night ?
- “ Interpose at the difficult minute, snatch Saul, the  
mistake,
- “ Saul, the failure, the ruin he seems now,—and bid him  
awake
- “ From the dream, the probation, the prelude, to find  
himself set
- “ Clear and safe in new light and new life,—a new  
harmony yet
- “ To be run, and continued, and ended—who knows?  
—or endure !
- “ The man taught enough by life’s dream, of the rest to  
make sure ;
- “ By the pain-throb, triumphantly winning intensified  
bliss,
- “ And the next world’s reward and repose, by the  
struggles in this.

## XVIII.

- “ I believe it ! ’T is thou, God, that givest, ’t is I who  
receive :
- “ In the first is the last, in thy will is my power to  
believe.
- “ All’s one gift : thou canst grant it moreover, as prompt  
to my prayer
- “ As I breathe out this breath, as I open these arms to  
the air.
- “ From thy will, stream the worlds, life and nature, thy  
dread Sabaoth :

"I will?—the mere atoms despise me! Why am I not  
loth

“To look that, even that in the face too? Why is it I dare

“Think but lightly of such impuissance? What stops  
my despair?”

“ This ;—’t is not what man Does which exalts him, but  
what man Would do !

“See the King—I would help him but cannot, the wishes fall through.

“ Could I wrestle to raise him from sorrow, grow poor to  
enrich,

“To fill up his life, starve my own out, I would—  
knowing which,

“ I know that my service is perfect. Oh, speak through me now !

“ Would I suffer for him that I love ? So wouldst thou  
—so wilt thou !

“ So shall crown thee the topmost, ineffablest, uttermost  
crown—

“ And thy love fill infinitude wholly, nor leave up nor down

“ One spot for the creature to stand in ! It is by no  
breath,

“ Turn of eye, wave of hand, that salvation joins issue  
with death !

“As thy Love is discovered almighty, almighty be  
proved

“Thy power, that exists with and for it, of being  
Beloved!

“ He who did most, shall bear most ; the strongest shall  
stand the most weak.

“ ’T is the weakness in strength, that I cry for ! my flesh,  
that I seek

“ In the Godhead ! I seek and I find it. O Saul, it  
shall be

“ A Face like my face that receives thee ; a Man like to  
me,

“ Thou shalt love and be loved by, for ever : a Hand  
like this hand

“ Shall throw open the gates of new life to thee ! See  
the Christ stand ! ”

xix.

I know not too well how I found my way home in the  
night.

There were witnesses, cohorts about me, to left and to  
right,

Angels, powers, the unuttered, unseen, the alive, the  
aware :

I repressed, I got through them as hardly, as strugglingly  
there,

As a runner beset by the populace famished for news—  
Life or death. The whole earth was awakened, hell  
loosed with her crews ;

And the stars of night beat with emotion, and tingled  
and shot

Out in fire the strong pain of pent knowledge : but I  
fainted not,



For the Hand still impelled me at once and supported,  
suppressed  
All the tumult, and quenched it with quiet, and holy  
behest,  
Till the rapture was shut in itself, and the earth sank to  
rest.  
Anon at the dawn, all that trouble had withered from  
earth—  
Not so much, but I saw it die out in the day's tender  
birth ;  
In the gathered intensity brought to the grey of the hills ;  
In the shuddering forests' held breath ; in the sudden  
wind-thrills ;  
In the startled wild beasts that bore oft, each with eye  
sidling still  
Though averted with wonder and dread ; in the birds  
stiff and chill  
That rose heavily, as I approached them, made stupid  
with awe :  
E'en the serpent that slid away silent,—he felt the new  
law.  
The same stared in the white humid faces upturned by  
the flowers ;  
The same worked in the heart of the cedar and moved  
the vine-bowers :  
And the little brooks witnessing murmured, persistent  
and low,  
With their obstinate, all but hushed voices—"E'en so, it  
is so !"

7.1. 6<sup>th</sup> 1900

W. H. Thackeray

evening 17<sup>th</sup> 1901.

## MY STAR.

ALL that I know  
Of a certain star  
Is, it can throw  
(Like the angled spar)  
Now a dart of red,  
Now a dart of blue ;  
'Till my friends have said  
They would fain see, too,  
My star that dartles the red and the blue !  
Then it stops like a bird ; like a flower, hangs furled :  
They must solace themselves with the Saturn above it.  
What matter to me if their star is a world ?  
Mine has opened its soul to me ; therefore I love it.

---

## BY THE FIRE-SIDE.

## I.

How well I know what I mean to do  
When the long dark autumn evenings come ;  
And where, my soul, is thy pleasant hue ?  
With the music of all thy voices, dumb  
In life's November too !

II.

I shall be found by the fire, suppose,  
 O'er a great wise book as beseemeth age,  
 While the shutters flap as the cross-wind blows,  
 And I turn the page, and I turn the page,  
 Not verse now, only prose !

III.

Till the young ones whisper, finger on lip,  
 " There he is at it, deep in Greek :  
 " Now then, or never, out we slip  
 " To cut from the hazels by the creek  
 " A mainmast for our ship ! "

IV.

I shall be at it indeed, my friends !  
 Greek puts already on either side  
 Such a branch-work forth as soon extends  
 To a vista opening far and wide  
 And I pass out where it ends.

V.

The outside-frame, like your hazel-trees—  
 But the inside-archway widens fast,  
 And a rarer sort succeeds to these,  
 And we slope to Italy at last  
 And youth, by green degrees.

VI.

I follow wherever I am led,  
 Knowing so well the leader's hand :

Oh woman-country, wooed not wed,  
Loved all the more by earth's male-lands,  
Laid to their hearts instead !

## VII.

Look at the ruined chapel again  
Half-way up in the Alpine gorge !  
Is that a tower, I point you plain,  
Or is it a mill, or an iron forge  
Breaks solitude in vain ?

## VIII.

A turn, and we stand in the heart of things ;  
The woods are round us, heaped and dim ;  
From slab to slab how it slips and springs,  
The thread of water single and slim,  
Through the ravage some torrent brings !

## IX.

Does it feed the little lake below ?  
That speck of white just on its marge  
Is Pella ; see, in the evening-glow,  
How sharp the silver spear-heads charge  
When Alp meets heaven in snow !

## X.

On our other side is the straight-up rock ;  
And a path is kept 'twixt the gorge and it  
By boulder-stones where lichens mock  
The marks on a moth, and small ferns fit  
Their teeth to the polished block.

XI.

Oh the sense of the yellow mountain-flowers,  
 And thorny balls, each three in one,  
 The chestnuts throw on our path in showers !  
 For the drop of the woodland fruit 's begun,  
 These early November hours,

XII.

That crimson the creeper's leaf across  
 Like a splash of blood, intense, abrupt,  
 O'er a shield else gold from rim to boss,  
 And lay it for show on the fairy-cupped  
 Elf-needled mat of moss,

XIII.

By the rose-flesh mushrooms, undivulged  
 Last evening—nay, in to-day's first dew  
 Yon sudden coral nipple bulged,  
 Where a freaked fawn-coloured flaky crew  
 Of toad-stools peep indulged.

XIV.

And yonder, at foot of the fronting ridge  
 That takes the turn to a range beyond,  
 Is the chapel reached by the one-arched bridge  
 Where the water is stopped in a stagnant pond  
 Danced over by the midge.

XV.

The chapel and bridge are of stone alike,  
 Blackish-grey and mostly wet ;

Cut hemp-stalks steep in the narrow dyke.  
See here again, how the lichens fret  
And the roots of the ivy strike !

## xvi.

Poor little place, where its one priest comes  
On a festa-day, if he comes at all,  
To the dozen folk from their scattered homes,  
Gathered within that precinct small  
By the dozen ways one roams—

## xvii.

To drop from the charcoal-burners' huts,  
Or climb from the hemp-dressers' low shed,  
Leave the grange where the woodman stores his nuts,  
Or the wattled cote where the fowlers spread  
Their gear on the rock's bare juts.

## xviii.

It has some pretension too, this front,  
With its bit of fresco half-moon-wise  
Set over the porch, Art's early wont :  
'T is John in the Desert, I surmise,  
But has borne the weather's brunt—

## xix.

Not from the fault of the builder, though.  
For a pent-house properly projects  
Where three carved beams make a certain show,  
Dating—good thought of our architect's—  
'Five, six, nine, he lets you know.

XX.

And all day long a bird sings there,  
 And a stray sheep drinks at the pond at times ;  
 The place is silent and aware ;  
 It has had its scenes, its joys and crimes,  
 But that is its own affair.

XXI.

My perfect wife, my Leonor,  
 Oh heart, my own, oh eyes, mine too,  
 Whom else could I dare look backward for,  
 With whom beside should I dare pursue  
 The path grey heads abhor ?

XXII.

For it leads to a crag's sheer edge with them ;  
 Youth, flowery all the way, there stops—  
 Not they ; age threatens and they contemn,  
 Till they reach the gulf wherein youth drops,  
 One inch from our life's safe hem !

XXIII.

With me, youth led . . . I will speak now,  
 No longer watch you as you sit  
 Reading by fire-light, that great brow  
 And the spirit-small hand propping it,  
 Mutely, my heart knows how—

XXIV.

When, if I think but deep enough,  
 You are wont to answer, prompt as rhyme ;

And you, too, find without rebuff  
Response your soul seeks many a time  
Piercing its fine flesh-stuff.

## XXV.

My own, confirm me ! If I tread  
This path back, is it not in pride  
To think how little I dreamed it led  
To an age so blest that, by its side,  
Youth seems the waste instead ?

## XXVI.

My own, see where the years conduct !  
At first, 't was something our two souls  
Should mix as mists do ; each is sucked  
In each now : on, the new stream rolls,  
Whatever rocks obstruct.

## XXVII.

Think, when our one soul understands  
The great Word which makes all things new  
When earth breaks up and heaven expands,  
How will the change strike me and you  
In the house not made with hands ?

## XXVIII.

Oh I must feel your brain prompt mine,  
Your heart anticipate my heart,  
You must be just before, in fine,  
See and make me see, for your part,  
New depths of the divine !



XXIX.

But who could have expected this  
 When we two drew together first  
 Just for the obvious human bliss,  
 To satisfy life's daily thirst  
 With a thing men seldom miss ?

XXX.

Come back with me to the first of all,  
 Let us lean and love it over again,  
 Let us now forget and now recall,  
 Break the rosary in a pearly rain,  
 And gather what we let fall !

XXXI.

What did I say ?—that a small bird sings  
 All day long, save when a brown pair  
 Of hawks from the wood float with wide wings  
 Strained to a bell : 'gainst noon-day glare  
 You count the streaks and rings.

XXXII.

But at afternoon or almost eve  
 'T is better ; then the silence grows  
 To that degree, you half believe  
 It must get rid of what it knows,  
 Its bosom does so heave.

XXXIII.

Hither we walked then, side by side,  
 Arm in arm and cheek to cheek,

And still I questioned or replied,  
While my heart, convulsed to really speak,  
Lay choking in its pride.

## XXXIV.

Silent the crumbling bridge we cross,  
And pity and praise the chapel sweet,  
And care about the fresco's loss,  
And wish for our souls a like retreat,  
And wonder at the moss.

## XXXV.

Stoop and kneel on the settle under,  
Look through the window's grated square :  
Nothing to see ! For fear of plunder,  
The cross is down and the altar bare,  
As if thieves don't fear thunder.

## XXXVI.

We stoop and look in through the grate,  
See the little porch and rustic door,  
Read duly the dead builder's date ;  
Then cross the bridge that we crossed before,  
Take the path again—but wait !

## XXXVII.

Oh moment, one and infinite !  
The water slips o'er stock and stone ;  
The West is tender, hardly bright :  
How grey at once is the evening grown—  
One star, its chrysolite !

XXXVIII.

We two stood there with never a third,  
 But each by each, as each knew well :  
 The sights we saw and the sounds we heard,  
 The lights and the shades made up a spell  
 Till the trouble grew and stirred.

XXXIX.

Oh, the little more, and how much it is !  
 And the little less, and what worlds away !  
 How a sound shall quicken content to bliss,  
 Or a breath suspend the blood's best play,  
 And life be a proof of this !

XL.

Had she willed it, still had stood the screen  
 So slight, so sure, 'twixt my love and her :  
 I could fix her face with a guard between,  
 And find her soul as when friends confer,  
 Friends—lovers that might have been.

XLI.

For my heart had a touch of the woodland-time,  
 Wanting to sleep now over its best.  
 Shake the whole tree in the summer-prime,  
 But bring to the last leaf no such test !  
 " Hold the last fast ! " runs the rhyme.

XLII.

For a chance to make your little much,  
 To gain a lover and lose a friend,

Venture the tree and a myriad such,  
When nothing you mar but the year can mend :  
But a last leaf—fear to touch !

## XLIII.

Yet should it unfasten itself and fall  
Eddying down till it find your face  
At some slight wind—best chance of all !  
Be your heart henceforth its dwelling-place  
You trembled to forestall !

## XLIV.

Worth how well, those dark grey eyes,  
That hair so dark and dear, how worth  
That a man should strive and agonise,  
And taste a veriest hell on earth  
For the hope of such a prize !

## XLV.

You might have turned and tried a man,  
Set him a space to weary and wear,  
And prove which suited more your plan,  
His best of hope or his worst despair,  
Yet end as he began.

## XLVI.

But you spared me this, like the heart you are,  
And filled my empty heart at a word.  
If two lives join, there is oft a scar,  
They are one and one, with a shadowy third ;  
One near one is too far.

XLVII.

A moment after, and hands unseen  
 Were hanging the night around us fast ;  
 But we knew that a bar was broken between  
 Life and life : we were mixed at last  
 In spite of the mortal screen.

XLVIII.

The forests had done it ; there they stood ,  
 We caught for a moment the powers at play :  
 They had mingled us so, for once and good,  
 Their work was done—we might go or stay,  
 They relapsed to their ancient mood.

XLIX.

How the world is made for each of us !  
 How all we perceive and know in it  
 Tends to some moment's product thus,  
 When a soul declares itself—to wit,  
 By its fruit, the thing it does !

L.

Be hate that fruit or love that fruit,  
 It forwards the general deed of man,  
 And each of the Many helps to recruit  
 The life of the race by a general plan ;  
 Each living his own, to boot.

LI.

I am named and known by that moment's feat ;  
 There took my station and degree ;

So grew my own small life complete,  
 As nature obtained her best of me—  
 One born to love you, sweet !

## LII.

And to watch you sink by the fire-side now  
 Back again, as you mutely sit  
 Musing by fire-light, that great brow  
 And the spirit-small hand propping it,  
 Yonder, my heart knows how !

## LIII.

So, earth has gained by one man the more,  
 And the gain of earth must be heaven's gain too ;  
 And the whole is well worth thinking o'er  
 When autumn comes : which I mean to do  
 One day, as I said before.

*Nov 17<sup>th</sup> 1901.*

## ANY WIFE TO ANY HUSBAND.

## I.

My love, this is the bitterest, that thou—  
 Who art all truth, and who dost love me now  
 As thine eyes say, as thy voice breaks to say—  
 Shouldst love so truly, and couldst love me still  
 A whole long life through, had but love its will,  
 Would death that leads me from thee brook delay.

II.

I have but to be by thee, and thy hand  
 Will never let mine go, nor heart withstand  
 The beating of my heart to reach its place.  
 When shall I look for thee and feel thee gone?  
 When cry for the old comfort and find none?  
 Never, I know! Thy soul is in thy face.

III.

Oh, I should fade—'t is willed so! Might I save,  
 Gladly I would, whatever beauty gave  
 Joy to thy sense, for that was precious too.  
 It is not to be granted. But the soul  
 Whence the love comes, all ravage leaves that whole;  
 Vainly the flesh fades; soul makes all things new.

IV.

It would not be because my eye grew dim  
 Thou couldst not find the love there, thanks to Him  
 Who never is dishonoured in the spark  
 He gave us from his fire of fires, and bade  
 Remember whence it sprang, nor be afraid  
 While that burns on, though all the rest grow dark.

V.

So, how thou wouldst be perfect, white and clean  
 Outside as inside, soul and soul's demesne  
 Alike, this body given to show it by!  
 Oh, three-parts through the worst of life's abyss,  
 What plaudits from the next world after this,  
 Couldst thou repeat a stroke and gain the sky!

## VI.

And is it not the bitterer to think  
That disengage our hands and thou wilt sink  
Although thy love was love in very deed ?  
I know that nature ! Pass a festive day,  
Thou dost not throw its relic-flower away  
Nor bid its music's loitering echo speed.

## VII.

Thou let'st the stranger's glove lie where it fell ;  
If old things remain old things all is well,  
For thou art grateful as becomes man best :  
And hadst thou only heard me play one tune,  
Or viewed me from a window, not so soon  
With thee would such things fade as with the rest.

## VIII.

I seem to see ! We meet and part ; 't is brief ;  
The book I opened keeps a folded leaf,  
The very chair I sat on, breaks the rank ;  
That is a portrait of me on the wall—  
Three lines, my face comes at so slight a call :  
And for all this, one little hour to thank !

## IX.

But now, because the hour through years was fixed,  
Because our inmost beings met and mixed,  
Because thou once hast loved me—wilt thou dare  
Say to thy soul and Who may list beside,  
Therefore she is immortally my bride ;  
“ Chance cannot change my love, nor time impair.



X.

“ So, what if in the dusk of life that’s left,  
 “ I, a tired traveller of my sun bereft,  
 “ Look from my path when, mimicking the same,  
 “ The fire-fly glimpses past me, come and gone?  
 “ —Where was it till the sunset? where anon  
 “ It will be at the sunrise! What’s to blame?”

XI.

Is it so helpful to thee? Canst thou take  
 The mimic up, nor, for the true thing’s sake,  
 Put gently by such efforts at a beam?  
 Is the remainder of the way so long  
 Thou need’st the little solace, thou the strong?  
 Watch out thy watch, let weak ones doze and dream!

XII.

—Ah, but the fresher faces! “ Is it true,”  
 Thou’lt ask, “ some eyes are beautiful and new?  
 “ Some hair,—how can one choose but grasp such  
 wealth?  
 “ And if a man would press his lips to lips  
 “ Fresh as the wilding hedge-rose-cup there slips  
 “ The dew-drop out of, must it be by stealth?”

XIII.

“ It cannot change the love still kept for Her,  
 “ More than if such a picture I prefer  
 “ Passing a day with, to a room’s bare side:  
 “ The painted form takes nothing she possessed,  
 “ Yet, while the Titian’s Venus lies at rest,  
 “ A man looks. Once more, what is there to chide?”

## XIV.

So must I see, from where I sit and watch,  
My own self sell myself, my hand attach  
Its warrant to the very thefts from me—  
Thy singleness of soul that made me proud.  
Thy purity of heart I loved aloud,  
Thy man's-truth I was bold to bid God see !

## XV.

Love so, then, if thou wilt ! Give all thou canst  
Away to the new faces—disentranced,  
(Say it and think it) obdurate no more,  
Re-issue looks and words from the old mint,  
Pass them afresh, no matter whose the print  
Image and superscription once they bore !

## XVI.

Re-coin thyself and give it them to spend,—  
It all comes to the same thing at the end,  
Since mine thóu wast, mine art and mine shalt be,  
Faithful or faithless, sealing up the sum  
Or lavish of my treasure, thou must come  
Back to the heart's place here I keep for thee !

## XVII.

Only, why should it be with stain at all ?  
Why must I, 'twixt the leaves of coronal,  
Put any kiss of pardon on thy brow ?  
Why need the other women know so much,  
And talk together, "Such the look and such  
The smile he used to love with, then as now !"

XVIII.

Might I die last and show thee ! Should I find  
Such hardships in the few years left behind,  
If free to take and light my lamp, and go  
Into thy tomb, and shut the door and sit,  
Seeing thy face on those four sides of it  
The better that they are so blank, I know !

XIX.

Why, time was what I wanted, to turn o'er  
Within my mind each look, get more and more  
By heart each word, too much to learn at first ;  
And join thee all the fitter for the pause  
'Neath the low door-way's lintel. That were cause  
For lingering, though thou calledst, if I durst !

XX.

And yet thou art the nobler of us two :  
What dare I dream of, that thou canst not do,  
Outstripping my ten small steps with one stride ?  
I' ll say then, here 's a trial and a task—  
Is it to bear ?—if easy, I 'll not ask :  
Though love fail, I can trust on in thy pride.

XXI.

Pride ?—when those eyes forestall the life behind  
The death I have to go through !—when I find,  
Now that I want thy help most, all of thee !  
What did I fear ? Thy love shall hold me fast  
Until the little minute's sleep is past  
And I wake saved.—And yet it will not be !

## TWO IN THE CAMPAGNA.

## I.

I WONDER do you feel to-day  
As I have felt since, hand in hand,  
We sat down on the grass, to stray  
In spirit better through the land,  
This morn of Rome and May?

## II.

For me, I touched a thought, I know,  
Has tantalized me many times,  
(Like turns of thread the spiders throw  
Mocking across our path) for rhymes  
To catch at and let go.

## III.

Help me to hold it! First it left  
The yellowing fennel, run to seed  
There, branching from the brickwork's cleft,  
Some old tomb's ruin : yonder weed  
Took up the floating weft,

## IV.

Where one small orange cup amassed  
Five beetles,—blind and green they grope  
Among the honey-meal : and last,  
Everywhere on the grassy slope  
I traced it. Hold it fast!

V.

The champaign with its endless fleece  
 Of feathery grasses everywhere !  
 Silence and passion, joy and peace,  
 An everlasting wash of air—  
 Rome's ghost since her decease.

VI.

Such life here, through such lengths of hours,  
 Such miracles performed in play,  
 Such primal naked forms of flowers,  
 Such letting nature have her way  
 While heaven looks from its towers !

VII.

How say you ? Let us, O my dove,  
 Let us be unashamed of soul,  
 As earth lies bare to heaven above !  
 How is it under our control  
 To love or not to love ?

VIII.

I would that you were all to me,  
 You that are just so much, no more.  
 Nor yours nor mine, nor slave nor free !  
 Where does the fault lie ? What the core  
 O' the wound, since wound must be ?

IX.

I would I could adopt your will,  
 See with your eyes, and set my heart

Beating by yours, and drink my fill  
At your soul's springs,—your part, my part  
In life, for good and ill.

## x.

No. I yearn upward, touch you close,  
Then stand away. I kiss your cheek,  
Catch your soul's warmth,—I pluck the rose  
And love it more than tongue can speak—  
Then the good minute goes.

## xi.

Already how am I so far  
Out of that minute? Must I go  
Still like the thistle-ball, no bar,  
Onward, whenever light winds blow.  
Fixed by no friendly star?

## xii.

Just when I seemed about to learn!  
Where is the thread now? Off again!  
The old trick! Only I discern—  
Infinite passion, and the pain  
Of finite hearts that yearn.

---

# MISCONCEPTIONS.

## I.

THIS is a spray the Bird clung to,  
 Making it blossom with pleasure,  
 Ere the high tree-top she sprung to,  
 Fit for her nest and her treasure.  
 Oh, what a hope beyond measure  
 Was the poor spray's, which the flying feet hung to,—  
 So to be singled out, built in, and sung to !

## II.

This is a heart the Queen leant on.  
 Thrilled in a minute erratic,  
 Ere the true bosom she bent on,  
 Meet for love's regal dalmatic.  
 Oh, what a fancy ecstatic  
 Was the poor heart's, ere the wanderer went on—  
 Love to be saved for it, proffered to, spent on !

---

# A SERENADE AT THE VILLA.

## I.

THAT was I, you heard last night  
 When there rose no moon at all,

Nor, to pierce the strained and tight  
 Tent of heaven, a planet small :  
 Life was dead and so was light.

II.

Not a twinkle from the fly,  
 Not a glimmer from the worm.  
 When the crickets stopped their cry,  
 When the owls forbore a term,  
 You heard music ; that was I.

III.

Earth turned in her sleep with pain,  
 Sultrily suspired for proof :  
 In at heaven and out again,  
 Lightning !—where it broke the roof,  
 Bloodlike, some few drops of rain.

IV.

What they could my words expressed,  
 O my love, my all, my one !  
 Singing helped the verses best,  
 And when singing's best was done,  
 To my lute I left the rest.

V.

So wore night ; the East was gray,  
 White the broad-faced hemlock-flowers  
 There would be another day ;  
 Ere its first of heavy hours  
 Found me, I had passed away.



VI.

What became of all the hopes,  
 Words and song and lute as well?  
 Say, this struck you—"When life gropes  
 "Feebly for the path where fell  
 "Light last on the evening slopes,

VII.

"One friend in that path shall be,  
 "To secure my step from wrong;  
 "One to count night day for me,  
 "Patient through the watches long,  
 "Serving most with none to see."

VIII.

Never say—as something bodes—  
 "So, the worst has yet a worse!  
 "When life halts 'neath double loads,  
 "Better the task-master's curse  
 "Than such music on the roads!

IX.

"When no moon succeeds the sun,  
 "Nor can pierce the midnight's tent  
 "Any star, the smallest one,  
 "While some drops, where lightning rent,  
 "Show the final storm begun—

X.

"When the fire-fly hides its spot,  
 "When the garden-voices fail

“ In the darkness thick and hot,—  
 “ Shall another voice avail,  
 “ That shape be where these are not?

## XI.

“ Has some plague a longer lease,  
 “ Proffering its help uncouth?  
 “ Can't one even die in peace?  
 “ As one shuts one's eyes on youth,  
 “ Is that face the last one sees?”

## XII.

Oh how dark your villa was,  
 Windows fast and obdurate!  
 How the garden grudged me grass  
 Where I stood—the iron gate  
 Ground its teeth to let me pass!

---

 ONE WAY OF LOVE.

## I.

ALL June I bound the rose in sheaves.  
 Now, rose by rose, I strip the leaves  
 And strew them where Pauline may pass.  
 She will not turn aside? Alas!  
 Let them lie. Suppose they die?  
 The chance was they might take her eye.

## II.

How many a month I strove to suit  
 These stubborn fingers to the lute!

To-day I venture all I know.  
 She will not hear my music? So!  
 Break the string; fold music's wing:  
 Suppose Pauline had bade me sing!

III.

My whole life long I learned to love.  
 This hour my utmost art I prove  
 And speak my passion—heaven or hell?  
 She will not give me heaven? 'T is well!  
 Lose who may—I still can say,  
 Those who win heaven, blest are they!

---

ANOTHER WAY OF LOVE.

I.

JUNE was not over  
 Though past the full,  
 And the best of her roses  
 Had yet to blow,  
 W'en a man I know  
 (But shall not discover,  
 Since ears are dull,  
 And time discloses)  
 Turned him and said with a man's true air,  
 Half sighing a smile in a yawn, as 't were,—  
 "If I tire of your June, will she greatly care?"

## II.

Well, dear, in-doors with you !

True ! serene deadness

Tries a man's temper.

What's in the blossom

June wears on her bosom ?

Can it clear scores with you ?

Sweetness and redness,

*Eadem semper !*

Go, let me care for it greatly or slightly !

If June mend her bower now, your hand left unsightly

By plucking the roses,—my June will do rightly.

## III.

And after, for pastime,

If June be refulgent

With flowers in completeness,

All petals, no prickles,

Delicious as trickles

Of wine poured at mass-time,—

And choose One indulgent

To redness and sweetness :

Or if, with experience of man and of spider,

June use my June-lightning, the strong insect-ridder,

And stop the fresh film-work,—why, June will consider.

---

A PRETTY WOMAN.

I.

THAT fawn-skin-dappled hair of hers,  
 And the blue eye  
 Dear and dewy,  
 And that infantine fresh air of hers !

II.

To think men cannot take you, Sweet,  
 And enfold you,  
 Ay, and hold you,  
 And so keep you what they make you, Sweet !

III.

You like us for a glance, you know—  
 For a word's sake  
 Or a sword's sake,  
 All 's the same, whate'er the chance, you know.

IV.

And in turn we make you ours, we say—  
 You and youth too,  
 Eyes and mouth too,  
 All the face composed of flowers, we say.

## V.

All 's our own, to make the most of, Sweet—  
Sing and say for,  
Watch and pray for,  
Keep a secret or go boast of, Sweet !

## VI.

But for loving, why, you would not, Sweet,  
Though we prayed you,  
Paid you, brayed you  
In a mortar—for you could not, Sweet !

## VII.

So, we leave the sweet face fondly there :  
Be its beauty  
Its sole duty !  
Let all hope of grace beyond, lie there !

## VIII.

And while the face lies quiet there,  
Who shall wonder  
That I ponder  
A conclusion ? I will try it there.

## IX.

As,—why must one, for the love foregone,  
Scout mere liking ?  
Thunder-striking  
Earth,—the heaven, we looked above for, gone !

X.

Why, with beauty, needs there money be,  
 Love with liking ?  
 Crush the fly-king  
 In his gauze, because no honey-bee ?

XI.

May not liking be so simple-sweet,  
 If love grew there  
 'T would undo there  
 All that breaks the cheek to dimples sweet ?

XII.

Is the creature too imperfect, say ?  
 Would you mend it  
 And so end it ?  
 Since not all addition perfects aye !

XIII.

Or is it of its kind, perhaps,  
 Just perfection—  
 Whence, rejection  
 Of a grace not to its mind, perhaps ?

XIV.

Shall we burn up, tread that face at once  
 Into tinder,  
 And so hinder  
 Sparks from kindling all the place at once ?

## XV.

Or else kiss away one's soul on her?  
Your love-fancies!  
—A sick man sees  
Truer, when his hot eyes roll on her!

## XVI.

Thus the craftsman thinks to grace the rose,—  
Plucks a mould-flower  
For his gold flower,  
Uses fine things that efface the rose:

## XVII.

Rosy rubies make its cup more rose,  
Precious metals  
Ape the petals,—  
Last, some old king locks it up, morose!

## XVIII.

Then how grace a rose? I know a way!  
Leave it, rather.  
Must you gather?  
Smell, kiss, wear it—at last, throw away!

---



# RESPECTABILITY.

## I.

DEAR, had the world in its caprice  
 Deigned to proclaim "I know you both,  
 "Have recognized your plighted troth,  
 "Am sponsor for you : live in peace!"—  
 How many precious months and years  
 Of youth had passed, that speed so fast,  
 Before we found it out at last,  
 The world, and what it fears?

## II.

How much of priceless life were spent  
 With men that every virtue decks,  
 And women models of their sex,  
 Society's true ornament,—  
 Ere we dared wander, nights like this,  
 Thro' wind and rain, and watch the Seine,  
 And feel the Boulevart break again  
 To warmth and light and bliss?

## III.

I know! the world proscribes not love;  
 Allows my finger to caress  
 Your lips' contour and downiness,  
 Provided it supply a glove.

The world's good word !—the Institute !  
Guizot receives Montalembert !  
Eh ? Down the court three lampions flare :  
Put forward your best foot !

---

## LOVE IN A LIFE.

### I.

Room after room,  
I hunt the house through  
We inhabit together.  
Heart, fear nothing, for, heart, thou shalt find her—  
Next time, herself !—not the trouble behind her  
Left in the curtain, the couch's perfume !  
As she brushed it, the cornice-wreath blossomed anew :  
Yon looking-glass gleamed at the wave of her feather.

### II.

Yet the day wears,  
And door succeeds door ;  
I try the fresh fortune—  
Range the wide house from the wing to the centre.  
Still the same chance ! she goes out as I enter.  
Spend my whole day in the quest,—who cares ?  
But 't is twilight, you see,—with such suites to explore,  
Such closets to search, such alcoves to importune !

---

LIFE IN A LOVE.

ESCAPE me ?

Never—

Beloved !

While I am I, and you are you,

So long as the world contains us both,

Me the loving and you the loth,

While the one eludes, must the other pursue.

My life is a fault at last, I fear :

It seems too much like a fate, indeed !

Though I do my best I shall scarce succeed.

But what if I fail of my purpose here ?

It is but to keep the nerves at strain,

To dry one's eyes and laugh at a fall,

And baffled, get up and begin again,—

So the chace takes up one's life, that 's all.

While, look but once from your farthest bound

At me so deep in the dust and dark,

No sooner the old hope goes to ground

Than a new one, straight to the self-same mark,

I shape me—

Ever

Removed !

---

## IN THREE DAYS.

## I.

So, I shall see her in three days  
And just one night, but nights are short,  
Then two long hours, and that is morn.  
See how I come, unchanged, unworn !  
Feel, where my life broke off from thine,  
How fresh the splinters keep and fine,—  
Only a touch and we combine !

## II.

Too long, this time of year, the days !  
But nights, at least the nights are short.  
As night shows where her one moon is,  
A hand's-breadth of pure light and bliss,  
So life's night gives my lady birth  
And my eyes hold her ! What is worth  
The rest of heaven, the rest of earth ?

## III.

O loaded curls, release your store  
Of warmth and scent, as once before  
The tingling hair did, lights and darks  
Outbreaking into fairy sparks,  
When under curl and curl I pried  
After the warmth and scent inside,

Thro' lights and darks how manifold—  
The dark inspired, the light controlled !  
As early Art embrowns the gold.

IV.

What great fear, should one say, " Three days  
" That change the world might change as well  
" Your fortune ; and if joy delays,  
" Be happy that no worse befell !"  
What small fear, if another says,  
" Three days and one short night beside  
" May throw no shadow on your ways ;  
" But years must teem with change untried,  
" With chance not easily defied,  
" With an end somewhere undescried."  
No fear !—or if a fear be born  
This minute, it dies out in scorn.  
Fear? I shall see her in three days  
And one night, now the nights are short,  
Then just two hours, and that is morn.

---

IN A YEAR.

I.

NEVER any more,  
While I live,  
Need I hope to see his face  
As before.

Once his love grown chill,  
    Mine may strive :  
Bitterly we re-embrace,  
    Single still.

## II.

Was it something said,  
    Something done,  
Vexed him ? was it touch of hand,  
    Turn of head ?  
Strange ! that very way  
    Love begun :  
I as little understand  
    Love's decay.

## III.

When I sewed or drew,  
    I recall  
How he looked as if I sung,  
    —Sweetly too.  
If I spoke a word,  
    First of all  
Up his cheek the colour sprung,  
    Then he heard.

## IV.

Sitting by my side,  
    At my feet,  
So he breathed but air I breathed,  
    Satisfied !

I, too, at love's brim  
 Touched the sweet :  
 I would die if death bequeathed  
 Sweet to him.

v.

" Speak, I love thee best !"  
 He exclaimed :  
 " Let thy love my own foretell !"  
 I confessed :  
 " Clasp my heart on thine  
 " Now unblamed,  
 " Since upon thy soul as well  
 " Hangeth mine !"

vi.

Was it wrong to own,  
 Being truth ?  
 Why should all the giving prove  
 His alone ?  
 I had wealth and ease,  
 Beauty, youth :  
 Since my lover gave me love,  
 I gave these.

vii.

That was all I meant,  
 —To be just,  
 And the passion I had raised,  
 To content.

Since he chose to change  
Gold for dust,  
If I gave him what he praised  
Was it strange ?

## VIII.

Would he loved me yet,  
On and on,  
While I found some way undreamed  
—Paid my debt !  
Gave more life and more,  
Till, all gone,  
He should smile "She never seemed  
" Mine before.

## IX.

" What, she felt the while,  
" Must I think ?  
" Love 's so different with us men !"  
He should smile :  
" Dying for my sake—  
" White and pink !  
" Can't we touch these bubbles then  
" But they break ? "

## X.

Dear, the pang is brief,  
Do thy part,  
Have thy pleasure ! How perplexed  
Grows belief !



Well, this cold clay clod  
 Was man's heart :  
 Crumble it, and what comes next ?  
 Is it God ?

---

## WOMEN AND ROSES.

### I.

I DREAM of a red-rose tree.  
 And which of its roses three  
 Is the dearest rose to me ?

### II.

Round and round, like a dance of snow  
 In a dazzling drift, as its guardians, go  
 Floating the women faded for ages,  
 Sculptured in stone, on the poet's pages.  
 Then follow women fresh and gay,  
 Living and loving and loved to-day,  
 Last, in the rear, flee the multitude of maidens,  
 Beauties yet unborn. And all, to one cadence,  
 They circle their rose on my rose tree.

### III

Dear rose, thy term is reached,  
 Thy leaf hangs loose and bleached :  
 Bees pass it unimpeached.

## IV.

Stay then, stoop, since I cannot climb,  
You, great shapes of the antique time !  
How shall I fix you, fire you, freeze you,  
Break my heart at your feet to please you ?  
Oh, to possess and be possessed !  
Hearts that beat 'neath each pallid breast !  
Once but of love, the poesy, the passion,  
Drink but once and die !—In vain, the same fashion,  
They circle their rose on my rose tree.

## V.

Dear rose, thy joy 's undimmed  
Thy cup is ruby-rimmed,  
Thy cup's heart nectar-brimmed.

## VI.

Deep, as drops from a statue's plinth  
The bee sucked in by the hyacinth,  
So will I bury me while burning,  
Quench like him at a plunge my yearning,  
Eyes in your eyes, lips on your lips !  
Fold me fast where the cincture slips,  
Prison all my soul in eternities of pleasure,  
Girdle me for once ! But no—the old measure,  
They circle their rose on my rose tree.

## VII.

Dear rose without a thorn,  
Thy bud 's the babe unborn :  
First streak of a new morn.

VIII.

Wings, lend wings for the cold, the clear !  
 What is far conquers what is near.  
 Roses will bloom nor want beholders,  
 Sprung from the dust where our flesh moulders.  
 What shall arrive with the cycle's change ?  
 A novel grace and a beauty strange.  
 I will make an Eve, be the artist that began her,  
 Shaped her to his mind !—Alas ! in like manner  
 They circle their rose on my rose tree.

---

BEFORE.

I.

Let them fight it out, friend ! things have gone too far.  
 God must judge the couple : leave them as they are  
 —Whichever one 's the guiltless, to his glory,  
 And whichever one the guilt 's with, to my story !

II.

Why, you would not bid men, sunk in such a slough.  
 Strike no arm out further, stick and stink as now,  
 Leaving right and wrong to settle the embroilment.  
 Heaven with snaky hell, in torture and entoilment ?

## III.

Who 's the culprit of them? How must he conceive  
God—the queen he caps to, laughing in his sleeve,  
“ 'T is but decent to profess oneself beneath her :  
“ Still, one must not be too much in earnest, either !”

## IV.

Better sin the whole sin, sure that God observes ;  
Then go live his life out ! Life will try his nerves,  
When the sky, which noticed all, makes no disclosure,  
And the earth keeps up her terrible composure.

## V.

Let him pace at pleasure, past the walls of rose,  
Pluck their fruits when grape-trees graze him as he goes !  
For he 'gins to guess the purpose of the garden,  
With the sly mute thing, beside there, for a warden.

## VI.

What 's the leopard-dog-thing, constant at his side,  
A leer and lie in every eye of its obsequious hide?  
When will come an end to all the mock obeisance,  
And the price appear that pays for the misfeasance?

## VII.

So much for the culprit. Who 's the martyred man?  
Let him bear one stroke more, for be sure he can !  
He that strove thus evil's lump with good to leaven,  
Let him give his blood at last and get his heaven !

VIII.

All or nothing, stake it ! Trusts he God or no ?  
 Thus far and no farther ? farther ? be it so !  
 Now, enough of your chicane of prudent pauses,  
 Sage provisos, sub-intents and saving-clauses !

IX.

Ah, "forgive" you bid him ? While God's champion  
 lives,  
 Wrong shall be resisted : dead, why, he forgives.  
 But you must not end my friend ere you begin him ;  
 Evil stands not crowned on earth, while breath is in him.

X.

Once more—Will the wronger, at this last of all,  
 Dare to say, "I did wrong," rising in his fall ?  
 No?—Let go, then ! Both the fighters to their places !  
 While I count three, step you back as many paces !

—————

AFTER.

TAKE the cloak from his face, and at first  
 Let the corpse do its worst !

How he lies in his rights of a man !

Death has done all death can.

And, absorbed in the new life he leads,

He recks not, he heeds  
Nor his wrong nor my vengeance ; both strike  
On his senses alike,  
And are lost in the solemn and strange  
Surprise of the change.

Ha, what avails death to erase  
His offence, my disgrace ?  
I would we were boys as of old  
In the field, by the fold :  
His outrage, God's patience, man's scorn  
Were so easily borne !

I stand here now, he lies in his place :  
Cover the face !

---

## THE GUARDIAN-ANGEL.

A PICTURE AT FANO.

### I.

DEAR and great Angel, wouldst thou only leave  
That child, when thou hast done with him, for me !  
Let me sit all the day here, that when eve  
Shall find performed thy special ministry,  
And time come for departure, thou, suspending  
Thy flight, may'st see another child for tending,  
Another still, to quiet and retrieve.

II.

Then I shall feel thee step one step, no more,  
 From where thou standest now, to where I gaze,  
 —And suddenly my head is covered o'er  
 With those wings, white above the child who prays  
 Now on that tomb—and I shall feel thee guarding  
 Me, out of all the world ; for me, discarding  
 Yon heaven thy home, that waits and opes its door.

III.

I would not look up thither past thy head  
 Because the door opes, like that child, I know,  
 For I should have thy gracious face instead,  
 Thou bird of God ! And wilt thou bend me low  
 Like him, and lay, like his, my hands together,  
 And lift them up to pray, and gently tether  
 Me, as thy lamb there, with thy garment's spread ?

IV.

If this was ever granted, I would rest  
 My head beneath thine, while thy healing hands  
 Close-covered both my eyes beside thy breast,  
 Pressing the brain which too much thought expands,  
 Back to its proper size again, and smoothing  
 Distortion down till every nerve had soothing,  
 And all lay quiet, happy and suppressed.

V.

How soon all worldly wrong would be repaired !  
 I think how I should view the earth and skies

And sea, when once again my brow was bared

After thy healing, with such different eyes.

O world, as God has made it ! All is beauty :

And knowing this, is love, and love is duty.

What further may be sought for or declared ?

VI.

Guercino drew this angel I saw teach

(Alfred, dear friend !)—that little child to pray,  
Holding the little hands up, each to each

Pressed gently,—with his own head turned away  
Over the earth where so much lay before him  
Of work to do, though heaven was opening o'er him,  
And he was left at Fano by the beach.

VII.

We were at Fano, and three times we went

To sit and see him in his chapel there,  
And drink his beauty to our soul's content

—My angel with me too : and since I care  
For dear Guercino's fame (to which in power  
And glory comes this picture for a dower,  
Fraught with a pathos so magnificent)

VIII.

And since he did not work thus earnestly

At all times, and has else endured some wrong—  
I took one thought his picture struck from me,  
And spread it out, translating it to song.



My love is here. Where are you, dear old friend?  
 How rolls the Wairoa at your world's far end?  
 This is Ancona, yonder is the sea.

---

MEMORABILIA.

I.

AH, did you once see Shelley plain,  
 And did he stop and speak to you,  
 And did you speak to him again?  
 How strange it seems and new!

II.

But you were living before that,  
 And also you are living after;  
 And the memory I started at—  
 My starting moves your laughter!

III.

I crossed a moor, with a name of its own  
 And a certain use in the world no doubt,  
 Yet a hand's-breadth of it shines alone  
 'Mid the blank miles round about:

IV.

For there I picked up on the heather  
 And there I put inside my breast  
 A moulted feather, an eagle-feather!  
 Well, I forget the rest.

## POPULARITY.

## I.

STAND still, true poet that you are !

I know you ; let me try and draw you.  
Some night you 'll fail us : when afar  
You rise, remember one man saw you,  
Knew you, and named a star !

## II.

My star, God's glow-worm ! Why extend  
That loving hand of his which leads you,  
Yet locks you safe from end to end  
Of this dark world, unless he needs you,  
Just saves your light to spend ?

## III.

His clenched hand shall unclose at last,  
I know, and let out all the beauty :  
My poet holds the future fast,  
Accepts the coming ages' duty,  
Their present for this past.

## IV.

That day, the earth's feast-master's brow  
Shall clear, to God the chalice raising ;  
“ Others give best at first, but thou  
“ Forever set'st our table praising,  
“ Keep'st the good wine till now ! ”

V.

Meantime, I 'll draw you as you stand,  
 With few or none to watch and wonder :  
 I 'll say—a fisher, on the sand  
 By Tyre the old, with ocean-plunder,  
 A netful, brought to land.

VI.

Who has not heard how Tyrian shells  
 Enclosed the blue, that dye of dyes  
 Whereof one drop worked miracles,  
 And coloured like Astarte's eyes  
 Raw silk the merchant sells?

VII.

And each bystander of them all  
 Could criticize, and quote tradition  
 How depths of blue sublimed some pall  
 —To get which, pricked a king's ambition ;  
 Worth sceptre, crown and ball.

VIII.

Yet there 's the die, in that rough mesh,  
 The sea has only just o'er-whispered !  
 Live whelks, each lip's beard dripping fresh,  
 As if they still the water's lisp heard  
 Through foam the rock-weeds thresh.

IX.

Enough to furnish Solomon  
 Such hangings for his cedar-house,

That, when gold-robed he took the throne  
In that abyss of blue, the Spouse  
Might swear his presence shone

## X.

Most like the centre-spike of gold  
Which burns deep in the blue-bell's womb  
What time, with ardours manifold,  
The bee goes singing to her groom,  
Drunken and overbold.

## XI.

Mere conchs ! not fit for warp or woof !  
Till cunning come to pound and squeeze  
And clarify,—refine to proof  
The liquor filtered by degrees,  
While the world stands aloof.

## XII.

And there 's the extract, flaked and fine,  
And priced and saleable at last !  
And Hobbs, Nobbs, Stokes and Nokes combine  
To paint the future from the past,  
Put blue into their line.

## XIII.

Hobbs hints blue,—straight he turtle eats :  
Nobbs prints blue,—claret crowns his cup :  
Nokes outdares Stokes in azure feats,—  
Both gorge. Who fished the murex up ?  
What porridge had John Keats ?

# MASTER HUGUES OF SAXE-GOTHA.

## I.

HIST, but a word, fair and soft !

Forth and be judged, Master Hugues !

Answer the question I 've put you so oft :

What do you mean by your mountainous fugues ?

See, we 're alone in the loft,—

## II.

I, the poor organist here,

Hugues, the composer of note,

Dead though, and done with, this many a year :

Let 's have a colloquy, something to quote,

Make the world prick up its ear !

## III.

See, the church empties apace :

Fast they extinguish the lights.

Hallo there, sacristan ! Five minutes' grace

Here 's a crank pedal wants setting to rights,

Baulks one of holding the base.

## IV.

See, our huge house of the sounds,

Hushing its hundreds at once,

Bids the last loiterer back to his bounds !

—O you may challenge them, not a response

Get the church-saints on their rounds !

## V.

(Saints go their rounds, who shall doubt ?  
—March, with the moon to admire,  
Up nave, down chancel, turn transept about,  
Supervise all betwixt pavement and spire,  
Put rats and mice to the rout—

## VI.

Aloys and Jurien and Just—  
Order things back to their place,  
Have a sharp eye lest the candlesticks rust,  
Rub the church-plate, darn the sacrament-lace,  
Clear the desk-velvet of dust.)

## VII.

Here 's your book, younger folks shelve !  
Played I not off-hand and runningly,  
Just now, your masterpiece, hard number twelve ?  
Here 's what should strike, could one handle it  
cunningly :  
Help the axe, give it a helve !

## VIII.

Page after page as I played,  
Every bar's rest, where one wipes  
Sweat from one's brow, I looked up and surveyed,  
O'er my three claviers, yon forest of pipes  
Whence you still peeped in the shade.

## IX.

Sure you were wishful to speak.  
You, with brow ruled like a score,

Yes, and eyes buried in pits on each cheek,  
 Like two great breves, as they wrote them of yore,  
 Each side that bar, your straight beak !

X.

Sure you said—"Good, the mere notes !  
 "Still, couldst thou take my intent,  
 "Know what procured me our Company's votes—  
 "A master were lauded and sciolists shent,  
 "Parted the sheep from the goats !"

XI.

Well then, speak up, never flinch !  
 Quick, ere my candle 's a snuff  
 —Burnt, do you see ? to its uttermost inch—  
*I* believe in you, but that 's not enough :  
 Give my conviction a clinch !

XII.

First you deliver your phrase  
 —Nothing propound, that I see,  
 Fit in itself for much blame or much praise—  
 Answered no less, where no answer needs be .  
 Off start the Two on their ways.

XIII.

Straight must a Third interpose,  
 Volunteer needlessly help ;  
 In strikes a Fourth, a Fifth thrusts in his nose,  
 So the cry 's open, the kennel 's a-yelp,  
 Argument 's hot to the close.

## XIV.

One dissertates, he is candid ;  
 Two must discept,—has distinguished ;  
 Three helps the couple, if ever yet man did ;  
 Four protests ; Five makes a dart at the thing wished .  
 Back to One, goes the case bandied.

## XV.

One says his say with a difference ;  
 More of expounding, explaining !  
 All now is wrangle, abuse and vociferance ;  
 Now there 's a truce, all 's subdued, self-restraining :  
 Five, though, stands out all the stiffer hence.

## XVI.

One is incisive, corrosive ;  
 Two retorts, nettled, curt, crepitant ;  
 Three makes rejoinder, expansive, explosive ;  
 Four overbears them all, strident and strepitant :  
 Five . . . O Danaides, O Sieve !

## XVII.

Now, they ply axes, and crowbars ;  
 Now, they prick pins at a tissue  
 Fine as a skein of the casuist Escobar's  
 Worked on the bone of a lie. To what issue ?  
 Where is our gain at the Two-bars ?

## XVIII.

*Est fuga, volvitur rota.*

On we drift : where looms the dim port ?



One, Two, Three, Four, Five, contribute their quota :  
 Something is gained, if one caught but the import—  
 Show it us, Hugues of Saxe-Gotha !

XIX.

What with affirming, denying,  
 Holding, risposting, subjoining,  
 All 's like . . . it 's like . . . for an instance I 'm trying . .  
 There ! See our roof, its gilt moulding and groining  
 Under those spider-webs lying !

XX.

So your fugue broadens and thickens,  
 Greatens and deepens and lengthens,  
 Till we exclaim—" But where 's music, the dickens ?  
 " Blot ye the gold, while your spider-web strengthens  
 " —Blacked to the stoutest of tickens ? "

XXI.

I for man's effort am zealous :  
 Prove me such censure unfounded !  
 Seems it surprising a lover grows jealous—  
 Hopes 't was for something, his organ-pipes sounded,  
 Tiring three boys at the bellows ?

XXII.

Is it your moral of Life ?  
 Such a web, simple and subtle,  
 Weave we on earth here in impotent strife,  
 Backward and forward each throwing his shuttle,  
 Death ending all with a knife ?

## XXIII.

Over our heads truth and nature—  
Still our life's zigzags and dodges,  
Ins and outs, weaving a new legislature—  
God's gold just shining its last where that lodges,  
Palled beneath man's usurpature.

## XXIV.

So we o'ershroud stars and roses,  
Cherub and trophy and garland ;  
Nothings grow something which quietly closes  
Heaven's earnest eye : not a glimpse of the far land  
Gets through our comments and glozes.

## XXV.

Ah but traditions, inventions,  
(Say we and make up a visage)  
So many men with such various intentions,  
Down the past ages, must know more than *this* age !  
Leave we the web its dimensions !

## XXVI.

Who thinks Hugues wrote for the deaf,  
Proved a mere mountain in labour ?  
Better submit ; try again ; what 's the clef ?  
'Faith, 't is no trifle for pipe and for tabor—  
Four flats, the minor in F.

## XXVII.

Friend, your fugue taxes the finger :  
Learning it once, who would lose it ?

Yet all the while a misgiving will linger,  
 Truth 's golden o'er us although we refuse it—  
 Nature, thro' cobwebs we string her.

XXVIII.

Hugues ! I advise *meâ pœnâ*  
 (Counterpoint glares like a Gorgon)  
 Bid One, Two, Three, Four, Five, clear the arena !  
 Say the word, straight I unstop the full-organ,  
 Blare out the *mode Palestrina*.

XXIX.

While in the roof, if I 'm right there,  
 . . . Lo you, the wick in the socket !  
 Hallo, you sacristan, show us a light there !  
 Down it dips, gone like a rocket.  
 What, you want, do you, to come unawares,  
 Sweeping the church up for first morning-prayers,  
 And find a poor devil has ended his cares  
 At the foot of your rotten-runged rat-riddled stairs ?  
 Do I carry the moon in my pocket ?



THE  
RETURN OF THE DRUSES.

A TRAGEDY.

1843.

### PERSONS.

The Grand-Master's Prefect.

The Patriarch's Nuncio.

The Republic's Admiral.

LOYS DE DREUX, Knight-Novice.

Initiated Druses—DJABAL, KHALIL, ANAEL, MAANI, KARSHOOR,  
RAGHIB, AYOOB and others.

Uninitiated Druses.

Prefect's Guard, Nuncio's Attendants, Admiral's Force.

TIME, 14—

PLACE, An Islet of the Southern Sporades, colonised by Druses  
of Lebanon, and garrisoned by the Knights-Hospitallers of  
Rhodes.

SCENE, A Hall in the Prefect's Palace.

# THE RETURN OF THE DRUSES.

---

## ACT I.

*Enter stealthily KARSHOOK, RAGHIB, AYOOB and other initiated Druses, each as he enters casting off a robe that conceals his distinctive black vest and white turban; then, as giving a loose to exultation,—*

*Kar.* The moon is carried off in purple fire :  
Day breaks at last ! Break glory, with the day,  
On Djabal's dread incarnate mystery  
Now ready to resume its pristine shape  
Of Hakeem, as the Khalif vanished erst  
In what seemed death to uninstructed eyes,  
On red Mokattam's verge—our Founder's flesh,  
As he resumes our Founder's function !

*Ragh.* —Death  
Sweep to the Christian Prefect that enslaved  
So long us sad Druse exiles o'er the sea !

*Ay.*—Most joy be thine, O Mother-mount ! Thy brood  
Returns to thee, no outcasts as we left,  
But thus—but thus ! Behind, our Prefect's corse ;  
Before, a presence like the morning—thine,

Absolute Djabal late,—God Hakeem now  
That day breaks !

*Kar.* Off then, with disguise at last !  
As from our forms this hateful garb we strip,  
Lose every tongue its glozing accent too,  
Discard each limb the ignoble gesture ! Cry,  
'T is the Druse Nation, warders on our mount  
Of the world's secret, since the birth of time,  
—No kindred slips, no offsets from thy stock,  
No spawn of Christians are we, Prefect, we  
Who rise . . .

*Ay.* Who shout . . .

*Ragh.* Who seize, a first-fruits, ha—  
Spoil of the spoiler ! Brave !

*[They begin to tear down, and to dispute for, the decorations  
of the hall.]*

*Kar.* Hold !

*Ay.* —Mine, I say ;  
And mine shall it continue !

*Kar.* Just this fringe !  
Take anything beside ! Lo, spire on spire,  
Curl serpentwise wreathed columns to the top  
O' the roof, and hide themselves mysteriously  
Among the twinkling lights and darks that haunt  
Yon cornice ! Where the huge veil, they suspend  
Before the Prefect's chamber of delight,  
Floats wide, then falls again as if its slave,  
The scented air, took heart now, and anon  
Lost heart to buoy its breadths of gorgeousness



Above the gloom they droop in—all the porch  
 Is jewelled o'er with frostwork charactery ;  
 And see yon eight-point cross of white flame, winking  
 Hoar-silvery like some fresh-broke marble stone :  
 Raze out the Rhodian cross there, so thou leav'st me  
 This single fringe !

*Ay.*                                Ha, wouldst thou, dog-fox ? Help !  
 —Three hand-breadths of gold fringe, my son was set  
 To twist, the night he died !

*Kar.*                                Nay, hear the knave !  
 And I could witness my one daughter borne,  
 A week since, to the Prefect's couch, yet fold  
 These arms, be mute, lest word of mine should mar  
 Our Master's work, delay the Prefect here  
 A day, prevent his sailing hence for Rhodes—  
 How know I else ?—Hear me denied my right  
 By such a knave !

*Ragh. [interposing.]* Each ravage for himself !  
 Booty enough ! On, Druses ! Be there found  
 Blood and a heap behind us ; with us, Djabal  
 Turned Hakeem ; and before us, Lebanon !  
 Yields the porch ? Spare not ! There his minions dragged  
 Thy daughter, Karshook, to the Prefect's couch !  
 Ayoob ! Thy son, to soothe the Prefect's pride,  
 Bent o'er that task, the death-sweat on his brow,  
 Carving the spice-tree's heart in scroll-work there !  
 Onward in Djabal's name !

*As the tumult is at height, enter KHALIL. A pause and silence.*

*Kha.*                                Was it for this,

Djabal hath summoned you ? Deserve you thus  
 A portion in to-day's event ? What, here—  
 When most behoves your feet fall soft, your eyes  
 Sink low, your tongues lie still,—at Djabal's side,  
 Close in his very hearing, who, perchance,  
 Assumes e'en now God Hakeem's dreaded shape,—  
 Dispute you for these gauds ?

*Ay.* How say'st thou, Khalil ?

Doubtless our Master prompts thee ! Take the fringe,  
 Old Karshook ! I supposed it was a day . . .

*Kha.* For pillage ?

*Kar.* Hearken, Khalil ! Never spoke  
 A boy so like a song-bird ; we avouch thee  
 Prettiest of all our Master's instruments  
 Except thy bright twin-sister ; thou and Anael  
 Challenge his prime regard : but we may crave  
 (Such nothings as we be) a portion too  
 Of Djabal's favour ; in him we believed,  
 His bound ourselves, him moon by moon obeyed,  
 Kept silence till this daybreak—so, may claim  
 Reward : who grudges me my claim ?

*Ay.* To-day  
 Is not as yesterday !

*Ragh.* Stand off !

*Kha.* Rebel you ?  
 Must I, the delegate of Djabal, draw  
 His wrath on you, the day of our Return ?

*Other Druses.* Wrench from their grasp the fringe !  
 Hound ! must the earth

Vomit her plagues on us thro' thee?—and thee?  
 Plague me not, Khalil, for their fault!

*Kha.*

Oh, shame!

Thus breaks to-day on you, the mystic tribe  
 Who, flying the approach of Osman, bore  
 Our faith, a merest spark, from Syria's ridge  
 Its birthplace, hither! "Let the sea divide  
 "These hunters from their prey," you said; "and  
     safe

"In this dim islet's virgin solitude  
 "Tend we our faith, the spark, till happier time  
 "Fan it to fire; till Hakeem rise again,  
 "According to his word that, in the flesh  
 "Which faded on Mokattam ages since,  
 "He, at our extreme need, would interpose,  
 'And, reinstating all in power and bliss,  
     Lead us himself to Lebanon once more."

Was 't not thus you departed years ago,  
 Ere I was born?

*Druses.*

"T was even thus, years ago.

*Kha.* And did you call—(according to old laws  
 Which bid us, lest the sacred grow profane,  
 Assimilate ourselves in outward rites  
 With strangers fortune makes our lords, and live  
 As Christian with the Christian, Jew with Jew,  
 Druse only with the Druses)—did you call  
 Or no, to stand 'twixt you and Osman's rage,  
 (Mad to pursue e'en hither thro' the sea  
 The remnant of our tribe) a race self vowed

To endless warfare with his hordes and him,  
The White-cross Knights of the adjacent Isle?

*Kar.* And why else rend we down, wrench up, rase  
out?

These Knights of Rhodes we thus solicited  
For help, bestowed on us a fiercer pest  
Than aught we fled—their Prefect; who began  
His promised mere paternal governance,  
By a prompt massacre of all our Sheikhs  
Able to thwart the Order in its scheme  
Of crushing, with our nation's memory  
Each chance of our return, and taming us  
Bondslaves to Rhodes for ever—all, he thinks  
To end by this day's treason.

*Kha.*

Say I not?

You, fitted to the Order's purposes,  
Your Sheikhs cut off, your very garb proscribed,  
Must yet receive one degradation more;  
The Knights at last throw off the mask—transfer,  
As tributary now and appanage,  
This islet they are but protectors of,  
To their own ever-craving liege, the Church,  
Who licenses all crimes that pay her thus.  
You, from their Prefect, were to be consigned  
(Pursuant to I know not what vile pact)  
To the Knights' Patriarch, ardent to outvie  
His predecessor in all wickedness.  
When suddenly rose Djabal in the midst,  
Djabal, the man in semblance, but our God

Confessed by signs and portents. Ye saw fire  
Bicker round Djabal, heard strange music flit  
Bird-like about his brow?

*Druses.*

We saw—we heard !

Djabal is Hakeem, the incarnate Dread,  
The phantasm Khalif, King of Prodigies !

*Kha.* And as he said hath not our Khalif done,  
And so disposed events (from land to land  
Passing invisibly) that when, this morn,  
The pact of villany complete, there comes  
This Patriarch's Nuncio with this Master's Prefect  
Their treason to consummate,—each will face  
For a crouching handful, an uplifted nation ;  
For simulated Christians, confessed Druses ;  
And, for slaves past hope of the Mother-mount,  
Freedmen returning there 'neath Venice' flag ;  
That Venice which, the Hospitallers' foe,  
Grants us from Candia escort home at price  
Of our relinquished isle, Rhodes counts her own—  
Venice, whose promised argosies should stand  
Toward the harbour : is it now that you, and you,  
And you, selected from the rest to bear  
The burthen of the Khalif's secret, further  
To-day's event, entitled by your wrongs,  
And witness in the Prefect's hall his fate—  
That you dare clutch these gauds ? Ay, drop them !

*Kar.*

True,

Most true, all this ; and yet, may one dare hint,  
Thou art the youngest of us ?—though employed

Abundantly as Djabal's confidant,  
 Transmitter of his mandates, even now.  
 Much less, whene'er beside him Anael graces  
 The cedar throne, his queen-bride, art thou like  
 To occupy its lowest step that day !  
 Now, Khalil, wert thou checked as thou aspirest,  
 Forbidden such or such an honour,—say,  
 Would silence serve so amply ?

*Kha.* Karshook thinks

I covet honours ? Well, nor idly thinks !  
 Honours ? I have demanded of them all  
 The greatest !

*Kar.* I supposed so.

*Kha.* Judge yourselves !

Turn, thus : 't is in the alcove at the back  
 Of yonder columned porch, whose entrance now  
 The veil hides, that our Prefect holds his state,  
 Receives the Nuncio, when the one, from Rhodes,  
 The other lands from Syria ; there they meet.  
 Now, I have sued with earnest prayers . . .

*Kar.* For what

Shall the Bride's brother vainly sue ?

*Kha.* 'That mine—

Avenging in one blow a myriad wrongs  
 —Might be the hand to slay the Prefect there !  
 Djabal reserves that office for himself. [*A silence.*]  
 Thus far, as youngest of you all, I speak  
 —Scarce more enlightened than yourselves ; since, near  
 As I approach him, nearer as I trust

Soon to approach our Master, he reveals  
Only the God's power, not the glory yet.  
Therefore I reasoned with you : now, as servant  
To Djabal, bearing his authority,  
Hear me appoint your several posts ! Till noon  
None see him save myself and Anael : once  
The deed achieved, our Khalif, casting off  
The embodied Awe's tremendous mystery,  
The weakness of the flesh disguise, resumes  
His proper glory, ne'er to fade again.

*Enter a Druse.*

*The Druse.* Our Prefect lands from Rhodes !—with-  
out a sign

That he suspects aught since he left our Isle ;  
Nor in his train a single guard beyond  
The few he sailed with hence : so have we learned  
From Loys.

*Kar.* Loys ? Is not Loys gone  
For ever ?

*Ayoob.* Loys, the Frank Knight, returned ?

*The Druse.* Loys, the boy, stood on the leading prow  
Conspicuous in his gay attire, and leapt  
Into the surf the foremost. Since day-dawn  
I kept watch to the Northward ; take but note  
Of my poor vigilance to Djabal !

*Kha.* Peace !

Thou, Karshook, with thy company, receive  
The Prefect as appointed : see, all keep  
The wonted show of servitude : announce

His entry here by the accustomed peal  
 Of trumpets, then await the further pleasure  
 Of Djabal ! (Loys back, whom Djabal sent  
 To Rhodes that we might spare the single Knight  
 Worth sparing !)

*Enter a second Druse.*

*The Druse.* I espied it first ! Say, I  
 First spied the Nuncio's galley from the South !  
 Said'st thou a Crossed-keys' flag would flap the mast ?  
 It nears apace ! One galley and no more.  
 If Djabal chance to ask who spied the flag,  
 Forget not, I it was !

*Kha.* Thou, Ayoob, bring  
 The Nuncio and his followers hither ! Break  
 One rule prescribed, ye wither in your blood,  
 Die at your fault !

*Enter a third Druse.*

*The Druse.* I shall see home, see home !  
 —Shall banquet in the sombre groves again !  
 Hail to thee, Khalil ! Venice looms afar ;  
 The argosies of Venice, like a cloud,  
 Bear up from Candia in the distance !

*Kha.* Joy !  
 Summon our people, Raghib ! Bid all forth !  
 Tell them the long-kept secret, old and young !  
 Set free the captives, let the trampled raise  
 Their faces from the dust, because at length  
 The cycle is complete, God Hakeem's reign  
 Begins anew ! Say, Venice for our guard,



Ere night we steer for Syria ! Hear you, Druses ?  
 Hear you this crowning witness to the claims  
 Of Djabal ? Oh, I spoke of hope and fear,  
 Reward and punishment, because he bade  
 Who has the right ; for me, what should I say  
 But, mar not those imperial lineaments,  
 No majesty of all that rapt regard  
 Vex by the least omission ! Let him rise  
 Without a check from you !

*Druses.* Let Djabal rise !

*Enter LOYS.—The Druses are silent.*

*Loys.* Who speaks of Djabal ?—for I seek him,  
 friends !

[*Aside.*] *Tu Dieu !* 'T is as our Isle broke out in song  
 For joy, its Prefect-incubus drops off  
 To-day, and I succeed him in his rule !  
 But no—they cannot dream of their good fortune !

[*Aloud.*] Peace to you, Druses ! I have tidings for you,  
 But first for Djabal : where 's your tall bewitcher,  
 With that small Arab thin-lipped silver-mouth ?

*Kha.* [*Aside to KAR.*] Loys, in truth ! Yet Djabal  
 cannot err !

*Kar.* [*to KHA.*] And who takes charge of Loys ?  
 That 's forgotten,

Despite thy wariness ! Will Loys stand  
 And see his comrades slaughtered ?

*Loys.* [*Aside.*] How they shrink  
 And whisper, with those rapid faces ! What ?  
 The sight of me in their oppressors' garb

Strikes terror to the simple tribe? God's shame  
 On those that bring our Order ill repute!  
 But all 's at end now; better days begin  
 For these mild mountaineers from over-sea:  
 The timidest shall have in me no Prefect  
 To cower at thus! [*Aloud.*] I asked for Djabal—

*Kar.* [*Aside.*]

Better

One lured him, ere he can suspect, inside  
 The corridor; 't were easy to dispatch  
 A youngster. [*To Loys.*] Djabal passed some minutes  
 since

Thro' yonder porch, and . . .

*Kha.* [*Aside.*]

Hold! What, him dispatch?

The only Christian of them all we charge  
 No tyranny upon? Who,—noblest Knight  
 Of all that learned from time to time their trade  
 Of lust and cruelty among us,—heir  
 To Europe's pomp, a truest child of pride,—  
 Yet stood between the Prefect and ourselves  
 From the beginning? Loys, Djabal makes  
 Account of, and precisely sent to Rhodes  
 For safety?—I take charge of him!

[*To Loys.*]

Sir Loys,—

*Loys.* There, cousins! Does Sir Loys strike you dead?

*Kha.* [*advancing.*] Djabal has intercourse with few  
 or none

Till noontide: but, your pleasure?

*Loys.*

“Intercourse

“With few or none?”—(Ah Khalil, when you spoke

I saw not your smooth face ! All health !—and health  
 To Anael ! How fares Anael ?)—“ Intercourse  
 “ With few or none ? ” Forget you, I ’ve been friendly  
 With Djabal long ere you or any Druse ?  
 —Enough of him at Rennes, I think, beneath  
 The Duke my father’s roof ! He ’d tell by the hour,  
 With fixed white eyes beneath his swarthy brow,  
 Plausiblist stories . . .

*Kha.* Stories, say you ?—Ah,  
 The quaint attire !

*Loys.* My dress for the last time !  
 How sad I cannot make you understand,  
 This ermine, o’er a shield, betokens me  
 Of Bretagne, ancientest of provinces  
 And noblest ; and, what ’s best and oldest there,  
 See, Dreux’, our house’s blazon, which the Nuncio  
 Tacks to an Hospitaller’s vest to-day !

*Kha.* The Nuncio we await ? What brings you back  
 From Rhodes, Sir Loys ?

*Loys.* How you island-tribe  
 Forget the world awake while here you drowse !  
 What brings me back ? What should not bring me,  
 rather ?

Our Patriarch’s Nuncio visits you to-day—  
 Is not my year’s probation out ? I come  
 To take the knightly vows.

*Kha.* What ’s that you wear ?

*Loys.* This Rhodian cross ? The cross your Prefect  
 wore.

You should have seen, as I saw, the full Chapter  
 Rise, to a man, while they transferred this cross  
 From that unworthy Prefect's neck to . . . (fool—  
 My secret will escape me !) In a word,  
 My year's probation passed, a Knight ere eve  
 Am I ; bound, like the rest, to yield my wealth  
 To the common stock, to live in chastity,  
 (We Knights espouse alone our Order's fame)  
 —Change this gay weed for the black white-crossed gown,  
 And fight to death against the Infidel  
 —Not, therefore, against you, you Christians with  
 Such partial difference only as befits  
 The peaceullest of tribes ! But Khalil, prithee,  
 Is not the Isle brighter than wont to-day ?

*Kha.* Ah, the new sword !

*Loys.* See now ! You handle sword  
 As 't were a camel-staff ! Pull ! That 's my motto,  
 Annealed "*Pro fide*," on the blade in blue.

*Kha.* No curve in it ? Surely a blade should curve !

*Loys.* Straight from the wrist ! Loose—it should  
 poise itself !

*Kha.* [*waving with irrepressible exultation the sword.*]

We are a nation, Loys, of old fame  
 Among the mountains ! Rights have we to keep  
 With the sword too !

[*Remembering himself.*] But I forget—you bid me  
 Seek Djabal ?

*Loys.* What ! A sword's sight scares you not ?  
 (The People I will make of him and them !

Oh let my Prefect-sway begin at once !)

Bring Djabal—say, indeed, that come he must !

*Kha.* At noon seek Djabal in the Prefect's Chamber,  
And find . . . [*Aside.*] Nay, 't is thy cursed race's token,  
Frank pride, no special insolence of thine !

[*Aloud.*] Tarry, and I will do your bidding, Loys !

[*To the rest aside.*] Now, forth you ! I proceed to  
Djabal straight.

Leave this poor boy, who knows not what he says !

Oh will it not add joy to even thy joy,

Djabal, that I report all friends were true ?

[*KHALIL goes, followed by the Druses.*]

*Loys.* *Tu Dieu !* How happy I shall make these  
Druses !

Was 't not surpassingly contrived of me

To get the long list of their wrongs by heart,

Then take the first pretence for stealing off

From these poor islanders, present myself

Sudden at Rhodes before the noble Chapter,

And (as best proof of ardour in its cause

Which ere to-night will have become, too, mine)

Acquaint it with this plague-sore in its body,

This Prefect and his villanous career ?

The princely Synod ! All I dared request

Was his dismissal ; and they graciously

Consigned his very office to myself—

Myself may cure the Isle diseased !

And well

For them, they did so ! Since I never felt

How lone a lot, tho' brilliant, I embrace,  
Till now that, past retrieval, it is mine.  
To live thus, and thus die ! Yet, as I leapt  
On shore, so home a feeling greeted me  
That I could half believe in Djabal's story,  
He used to tempt my father with, at Rennes—  
And me, too, since the story brought me here—  
Of some Count Dreux and ancestor of ours  
Who, sick of wandering from Bouillon's war,  
Left his old name in Lebanon.

Long days  
At least to spend in the Isle ! and, my news known  
An hour hence, what if Anael turn on me  
The great black eyes I must forget ?

Why, fool,  
Recall them, then ? My business is with Djabal,  
Not Anael ! Djabal tarries : if I seek him ?—  
The Isle is brighter than its wont to-day !

---

## ACT II.

*Enter DJABAL.*

*Dja.* That a strong man should think himself a God !  
I—Hakeem ? To have wandered through the world,  
Sown falsehood, and thence reaped now scorn, now faith,

For my one chant with many a change, my tale  
 Of outrage, and my prayer for vengeance—this  
 Required, forsooth, no mere man's faculty,  
 Nor less than Hakeem's? The persuading Loys  
 To pass probation here; the getting access  
 By Loys to the Prefect; worst of all,  
 The gaining my tribe's confidence by fraud  
 That would disgrace the very Frank,—a few  
 Of Europe's secrets which subdue the flame,  
 The wave,—to ply a simple tribe with these,  
 Took Hakeem?

And I feel this first to-day!  
 Does the day break, is the hour imminent  
 When one deed, when my whole life's deed, my deed  
 Must be accomplished? Hakeem? Why the God?  
 Shout, rather, "Djabal, Youssof's child, thought slain  
 " With his whole race, the Druses' Sheikhs, this Prefect  
 " Endeavoured to extirpate—saved, a child,  
 " Returns from traversing the world, a man,  
 " Able to take revenge, lead back the march  
 " To Lebanon"—so shout, and who gainsays?  
 But now, because delusion mixed itself  
 Insensibly with this career, all's changed!  
 Have I brought Venice to afford us convoy?  
 " True—but my jugglings wrought that!" Put I heart  
 Into our people where no heart lurked?—"Ah,  
 " What cannot an impostor do!"

Not this!

Not do this which I do! Not bid, avaunt

Falsehood ! Thou shalt not keep thy hold on me !  
—Nor even get a hold on me ! 'T is now—

This day—hour—minute—'t is as here I stand

On the accursed threshold of the Prefect,

That I am found deceiving and deceived !

And now what do I ?—hasten to the few

Deceived, ere they deceive the many—shout,

“ As I professed, I did believe myself !

“ Say, Druses, had you seen a butchery—

“ If Ayoob, Karshook saw——Maani there

“ Must tell you how I saw my father sink ;

“ My mother's arms twine still about my neck ;

“ I hear my brother shriek, here 's yet the scar

“ Of what was meant for my own death-blow—say,

“ If you had woke like me, grown year by year

“ Out of the tumult in a far-off clime,

“ Would it be wondrous such delusion grew ?

“ I walked the world, asked help at every hand ;

“ Came help or no ? Not this and this ? Which helps

“ When I returned with, found the Prefect here,

“ The Druses here, all here, but Hakeem's self,

“ The Khalif of the thousand prophecies,

“ Reserved for such a juncture,—could I call

“ My mission aught but Hakeem's ? Promised **Hakeem**

“ More than performs the Djabal—you absolve ?

“ —Me, you will never shame before the crowd

“ Yet happily ignorant ?—Me, both throngs surround

“ The few deceived, the many unabused,

“ —Who, thus surrounded, slay for you and them



' The Prefect, lead to Lebanon? No Khalif,  
 " But Sheikh once more! Mere Djabal—not" . . .

*Enter KHALIL hastily.*

*Kha.* —God Hakeem!

'T is told! The whole Druse nation knows thee, Hakeem,  
 As we! and mothers lift on high their babes  
 Who seem aware, so glisten their great eyes,  
 Thou hast not failed us; ancient brows are proud!  
 Our elders could not earlier die, it seems,  
 Than at thy coming! The Druse heart is thine!  
 Take it! my lord and theirs, be thou adored!

*Dja. [Aside.]* Adored!—but I renounce it utterly!

*Kha.* Already are they instituting choirs  
 And dances to the Khalif, as of old  
 'T is chronicled thou bad'st them.

*Dja. [Aside.]* I abjure it!

'T is not mine—not for me!

*Kha.* Why pour they wine  
 Flavoured like honey and bruised mountain-herbs,  
 Or wear those strings of sun-dried cedar-fruit?  
 Oh, let me tell thee—Esaad, we supposed  
 Doting, is carried forth, eager to see  
 The last sun rise on the Isle: he can see now!  
 The shamed Druse women never wept before:  
 They can look up when we reach home, they say.  
 Smell!—sweet cane, saved in Lilith's breast thus long—  
 Sweet!—it grows wild in Lebanon. And I  
 Alone do nothing for thee! 'T is my office  
 Just to announce what well thou know'st—but thus

Thou bidst me. At this self-same moment tend  
 The Prefect, Nuncio and the Admiral  
 Hither by their three sea-paths : nor forget  
 Who were the trusty watchers !—thou forget ?  
 Like me, who do forget that Anael bade . . .

*Dja.* [*Aside.*] Ay, Anael, Anael—is that said at  
 last ?

Louder than all, that would be said, I knew !  
 What does abjuring mean, confessing mean,  
 To the people ? Till that woman crossed my path,  
 On went I, solely for my people's sake :  
 I saw her, and I then first saw myself,  
 And slackened pace : “ if I should prove indeed  
 “ Hakeem—with Anael by ! ”

*Kha.* [*Aside.*] Ah, he is rapt !  
 Dare I at such a moment break on him  
 Even to do my sister's bidding ? Yes :  
 The eyes are Djabal's and not Hakeem's yet,  
 Though but till I have spoken this, perchance.

*Dja.* [*Aside.*] To yearn to tell her, and yet have no  
 one

Great heart's word that will tell her ! I could gasp  
 Doubtless one such word out, and die.

[*Aloud.*] You said

That Anael . . .

*Kha.* . . . Fain would see thee, speak with thee,  
 Before thou change, discard this Djabal's shape  
 She knows, for Hakeem's shape she is to know.  
 Something to say that will not from her mind !

I know not what—"Let him but come!" she said.

*Dja.* [*Half-apart.*] My nation—all my Druses—how  
fare they?

Those I must save, and suffer thus to save,  
Hold they their posts? Wait they their Khalif too?

*Kha.* All at the signal pant to flock around  
That banner of a brow!

*Dja.* [*Aside.*] And when they flock,  
Confess them this: and after, for reward,  
Be chased with howlings to her feet perchance!  
—Have the poor outraged Druses, deaf and blind,  
Precede me there, forestall my story there,  
Tell it in mocks and jeers!

I lose myself!

Who needs a Hakeem to direct him now?  
I need the veriest child—why not this child?

[*Turning abruptly to KHALIL.*

You are a Druse too, Khalil; you were nourished  
Like Anael with our mysteries: if she  
Could vow, so nourished, to love only one  
Who should avenge the Druses, whence proceeds  
Your silence? Wherefore made you no essay,  
Who thus implicitly can execute  
My bidding? What have I done, you could not?  
Who, knowing more than Anael the prostration  
Of our once lofty tribe, the daily life  
Of this detested . . .

Does he come, you say,  
This Prefect? All's in readiness?

*Kha.* The sword,  
The sacred robe, the Khalif's mystic tiar,  
Laid up so long, are all disposed beside  
The Prefect's chamber.

*Dja.* —Why did you despair?

*Kha.* I know our nation's state? Too surely know,  
As thou who speak'st to prove me! Wrongs like ours  
Should wake revenge: but when I sought the wronged  
And spoke,—“The Prefect stabbed your son—arise!  
“Your daughter, while you starve, eats shameless bread  
“In his pavilion—then arise!”—my speech  
Fell idly—'t was, “Be silent, or worse fare!  
“Endure till time's slow cycle prove complete!  
“Who may'st thou be that takest on thee to thrust  
“Into this peril—art thou Hakeem?” No!  
Only a mission like thy mission renders  
All these obedient at a breath, subdues  
Their private passions, brings their wills to one!

*Dja.* You think so?

*Kha.* Even now—when they have witnessed  
Thy miracles—had I not threatened all  
With Hakeem's vengeance, they would mar the work,  
And couch ere this, each with his special prize,  
Safe in his dwelling, leaving our main hope  
To perish! No! When these have kissed thy feet  
At Lebanon, the past purged off, the present  
Clear,—for the future, even Hakeem's mission  
May end, and I perchance, or any youth,  
Shall rule them thus renewed.—I talk to thee!

*Dja.* And wisely. He is Anael's brother, pure  
As Anael's self. Go say, I come to her.

Haste ! I will follow you. [KHALIL goes.

Oh, not confess  
To these, the blinded multitude—confess,  
Before at least the fortune of my deed  
Half authorize its means ! Only to her  
Let me confess my fault, who in my path  
Curled up like incense from a mage-king's tomb  
When he would have the wayfarer descend  
Through the earth's rift and bear hid treasure forth !  
When should my first child's-carelessness have stopped  
If not when I, whose lone youth hurried past,  
Letting each joy 'scape for the Druses' sake,  
At length recovered in one Druse all joy ?  
Were her brow brighter, her eyes richer, still  
Would I confess ! On the gulf's verge I pause.  
How could I slay the Prefect, thus and thus ?  
Anael, be mine to guard me, not destroy ! [Goes.

*Enter ANAEL, and MAANI who is assisting to array her in the  
ancient dress of the Druses.*

*An.* Those saffron vestures of the tabret-girls !  
Comes Djabal, think you ?

*Maa.* Doubtless Djabal comes.

*An.* Dost thou snow-swathe thee kinglier, Lebanon,  
Than in my dreams ?—Nay, all the tresses off  
My forehead ! Look I lovely so ? He says  
That I am lovely.



Well—and that morning Djabal saw me first  
And heard me vow never to wed but one  
Who saved my People—on that day . . . proceed !  
*Maa.* Once more, then : from the time of his return  
In *sécret*, changed so since he left the Isle  
That I, who screened our Emir's last of sons,  
This Djabal, from the Prefect's massacre  
—Who bade him ne'er forget the child he was,  
—Who dreamed so long the youth he might become—  
I knew not in the man that child ; the man  
Who spoke alone of hope to save our tribe,  
How he had gone from land to land to save  
Our tribe—allies were sure, nor foes to dread ;  
And much he mused, days, nights, alone he mused :  
But never till that day when, pale and worn  
As by a persevering woe, he cried  
“ Is there not one Druse left me ? ”—and I showed  
The way to Khalil's and your hiding-place  
From the abhorred eye of the Prefect here,  
So that he saw you, heard you speak—till then,  
Never did he announce—(how the moon seemed  
To ope and shut, the while, above us both !)  
—His mission was the mission promised us ;  
The cycle had revolved ; all things renewing,  
He was lost Hakeem clothed in flesh to lead  
His children home anon, now veiled to work  
Great purposes : the Druses now would change !

*An.* And they have changed ! And obstacles did sink,  
And furtherances rose ! And round his form

Played fire, and music beat her angel wings !  
 My people, let me more rejoice, oh more  
 For you than for myself ! Did I but watch  
 Afar the pageant, feel our Khalif pass,  
 One of the throng, how proud were I—tho' ne'er  
 Singled by Djabal's glance ! But to be chosen  
 His own from all, the most his own of all,  
 To be exalted with him, side by side.  
 Lead the exulting Druses, meet . . . ah, how  
 Worthily meet the maidens who await  
 Ever beneath the cedars—how deserve  
 This honor, in their eyes ? So bright are they  
 Who saffron-vested sound the tabret there,  
 The girls who throng there in my dream ! One hour  
 And all is over : how shall I do aught  
 That may deserve next hour's exalting ?—How ?—

[Suddenly to MAANI.]

Mother, I am not worthy him ! I read it  
 Still in his eyes ! He stands as if to tell me  
 I am not, yet forbears. Why else revert  
 To one theme ever ?—how mere human gifts  
 Suffice him in myself—whose worship fades,  
 Whose awe goes ever off at his approach,  
 As now, who when he comes . . .

[DJABAL enters.]

Oh why is it

I cannot kneel to you ?

*Dia.*

Rather, 't is I

Should kneel to you, my Anael !

*An.*

Even so !



For never seem you—shall I speak the truth?—  
 Never a God to me! 'T is the Man's hand,  
 Eye, voice! Oh do you veil these to our people,  
 Or but to me? To them, I think, to them!  
 And brightness is their veil, shadow—my truth!  
 You mean that I should never kneel to you  
 —So I will kneel!

*Dja.* [*preventing her.*] No—no!

[*Feeling the khandjar as he raises her.*

Ha, have you chosen . . .

*An.* The khandjar with our ancient garb. But, Djabal,  
 Change not, be not exalted yet! Give time  
 That I may plan more, perfect more! My blood  
 Beats, beats!

[*Aside.*] Oh must I then—since Loys leaves us  
 Never to come again, renew in me  
 These doubts so near effaced already—must  
 I needs confess them now to Djabal?—own  
 That when I saw that stranger, heard his voice,  
 My faith fell, and the woeful thought flashed first  
 That each effect of Djabal's presence, taken  
 For proof of more than human attributes  
 In him, by me whose heart at his approach  
 Beat fast, whose brain while he was by swam round,  
 Whose soul at his departure died away,  
 —That every such effect might have been wrought  
 In other frames, tho' not in mine, by Loys  
 Or any merely mortal presence? Doubt  
 Is fading fast; shall I reveal it now?

How shall I meet the rapture presently,  
With doubt unexpiated, undisclosed ?

*Dja.* [*Aside.*] Avow the truth ? I cannot ! In what  
words

Avow that all she loved in me was false ?  
—Which yet has served that flower-like love of hers  
To climb by, like the clinging gourd, and clasp  
With its divinest wealth of leaf and bloom.  
Could I take down the prop-work, in itself  
So vile, yet interlaced and overlaid  
With painted cups and fruitage—might these still  
Bask in the sun, unconscious their own strength  
Of matted stalk and tendril had replaced  
The old support thus silently withdrawn !  
But no ; the beauteous fabric crushes too.  
'T is not for my sake but for Anael's sake  
I leave her soul this Hakeem where it leans !  
Oh could I vanish from her—quit the Isle !  
And yet—a thought comes : here my work is done  
At every point ; the Druses must return—  
Have convoy to their birth-place back, whoever  
The leader be, myself or any Druse—  
Venice is pledged to that : 't is for myself,  
For my own vengeance in the Prefect's death,  
I stay now, not for them : to slay or spare  
The Prefect, whom imports it save myself ?  
He cannot bar their passage from the Isle ;  
What would his death be but my own reward ?  
Then, mine I will forego. It is foregone !

Let him escape with all my House's blood !  
 Ere he can reach land, Djabal disappears,  
 And Hakeem, Anael loved, shall, fresh as first,  
 Live in her memory, keeping her sublime  
 Above the world. She cannot touch that world  
 By ever knowing what I truly am,  
 Since Loys,—of mankind the only one  
 Able to link my present with my past,  
 My life in Europe with my Island life,  
 Thence, able to unmask me,—I 've disposed  
 Safely at last at Rhodes, and . . .

*Enter KHALIL.*

*Kha.* Loys greets thee !

*Dja.* Loys ? To drag me back ? It cannot be !

*An.* [*Aside.*] Loys ! Ah, doubt may not be stifled so !

*Kha.* Can I have erred that thou so gazest ? Yes,  
 I told thee not in the glad press of tidings  
 Of higher import, Loys is returned  
 Before the Prefect, with, if possible,  
 Twice the light-heartedness of old. As though  
 On some inauguration he expects,  
 To-day, the world's fate hung !

*Dja.* —And asks for me ?

*Kha.* Thou knowest all things ! Thee in chief he  
 greets,

But every Druse of us is to be happy  
 At his arrival, he declares : were Loys  
 Thou, Master, he could have no wider soul  
 To take us in with. How I love that Loys !

*Dja.* [*Aside.*] Shame winds me with her tether round  
and round !

*An.* [*Aside.*] Loys ? I take the trial ! it is meet,  
The little I can do, be done ; that faith,  
All I can offer, want no perfecting  
Which my own act may compass. Ay, this way  
All may go well, nor that ignoble doubt  
Be chased by other aid than mine. Advance  
Close to my fear, weigh Loys with my Lord,  
The mortal with the more than mortal gifts !

*Dja.* [*Aside.*] Before, there were so few deceived ! and  
now

There 's doubtless not one least Druse in the Isle  
But, having learned my superhuman claims,  
And calling me his Khalif-God, will clash  
The whole truth out from Loys at first word !  
While Loys, for his part, will hold me up,  
With a Frank's unimaginable scorn  
Of such imposture, to my people's eyes !  
Could I but keep him longer yet awhile  
From them, amuse him here until I plan  
How he and I at once may leave the Isle !  
Khalil I cannot part with from my side—  
My only help in this emergency :  
There 's Anael !

*An.* Please you ?

*Dja.* Anael—none but she !

[*To ANAEL.*] I pass some minutes in the chamber there,  
Ere I see Loys : you shall speak with him

Until I join you. Khalil follows me.

*An. [Aside.]* As I divined : he bids me save myself,  
Offers me a probation—I accept !

Let me see Loys !

*Loys. [Without.]* Djabal !

*An. [Aside.]* 'T is his voice.

The smooth Frank trifler with our people's wrongs,  
The self-complacent boy-inquirer, loud  
On this and that inflicted tyranny,  
—Aught serving to parade an ignorance  
Of how wrong feels, inflicted ! Let me close  
With what I viewed at distance : let myself  
Probe this delusion to the core !

*Dja.* He comes.

Khalil, along with me ! while Anaël waits  
Till I return once more—and but once more !

---

### ACT III.

ANAËL and LOYS.

*An.* Here leave me ! Here I wait another. 'T was  
For no mad protestation of a love  
Like this you say possesses you, I came.

*Loys.* Love ? how protest a love I dare not feel ?  
Mad words may doubtless have escaped me : you  
Are here—I only feel you here !

*An.*

No more !

*Loys.* But once again, whom could you love? I dare,  
 Alas, say nothing of myself, who am  
 A Knight now, for when Knighthood we embrace,  
 Love we abjure : so, speak on safely : speak,  
 Lest I speak, and betray my faith ! And yet  
 To say your breathing passes through me, changes  
 My blood to spirit, and my spirit to you,  
 As Heaven the sacrificer's wine to it—  
 This is not to protest my love ! You said  
 You could love one . . .

*An.*

One only ! We are bent  
 To earth—who raises up my tribe, I love ;  
 The Prefect bows us—who removes him ; we  
 Have ancient rights—who gives them back to us,  
 I love. Forbear me ! Let my hand go !

*Loys.*

Him

You could love only? Where is Djabal? Stay !  
 [*Aside.*] Yet wherefore stay? Who does this but  
 myself?

Had I apprised her that I come to do  
 Just this, what more could she acknowledge? No,  
 She sees into my heart's core ! What is it  
 Feeds either cheek with red, as June some rose ?  
 Why turns she from me? Ah fool, over-fond  
 To dream I could call up . . .

. . . What never dream

Yet feigned ! 'T is love ! Oh Anael speak to me !  
 Djabal—

*An.* Seek Djabal by the Prefect's chamber  
At noon ! *[She paces the room.]*

*Loys. [Aside.]* And am I not the Prefect now ?  
Is it my fate to be the only one  
Able to win her love, the only one  
Unable to accept her love ? The past  
Breaks up beneath my footing : came I here  
This morn as to a slave, to set her free  
And take her thanks, and then spend day by day  
Content beside her in the Isle ? What works  
This knowledge in me now ? Her eye has broken  
The faint disguise away : for Anael's sake  
I left the Isle, for her espoused the cause  
Of the Druses, all for her I thought, till now,  
To live without !

—As I must live ! To-day  
Ordains me Knight, forbids me . . . never shall  
Forbid me to profess myself, heart, arm,  
Thy soldier !

*An.* Djabal you demanded, comes !

*Loys. [Aside.]* What wouldst thou, Loys ? See him ?  
Nought beside

Is wanting : I have felt his voice a spell  
From first to last. He brought me here, made known  
The Druses to me, drove me hence to seek  
Redress for them ; and shall I meet him now,  
When nought is wanting but a word of his,  
To—what ?—induce me to spurn hope, faith, pride,  
Honour away,—to cast my lot among

His tribe, become a proverb in men's mouths,  
 Breaking my high pact of companionship  
 With those who graciously bestowed on me  
 The very opportunities I turn  
 Against them ! Let me not see Djabal now !

*An.* The Prefect also comes !

*Loys.* [*Aside.*] Him let me see,  
 Not Djabal ! Him, degraded at a word,  
 To soothe me,—to attest belief in me—  
 And after, Djabal ! Yes, ere I return  
 To her, the Nuncio's vow shall have destroyed  
 This heart's rebellion, and coerced this will  
 For ever.

Anael, not before the vows  
 Irrevocably fix me . . .

Let me fly !

The Prefect, or I lose myself for ever ! [*Goes.*]

*An.* Yes, I am calm now ; just one way remains—  
 One, to attest my faith in him : for, see,  
 I were quite lost else : Loys, Djabal, stand  
 On either side—two men ! I balance looks  
 And words, give Djabal a man's preference,  
 No more. In Djabal, Hakeem is absorbed !  
 And for a love like this, the God who saves  
 My race, selects me for his bride ? One way !—

*Enter DJABAL.*

*Dja.* [*to himself.*] No moment is to waste then ; 't is  
 resolved.

If Khalil may be trusted to lead back



My Druses, and if Loys can be lured  
Out of the Isle—if I procure his silence,  
Or promise never to return at least,—  
All 's over. Even now my bark awaits :  
I reach the next wild islet and the next,  
And lose myself beneath the sun for ever.  
And now, to Anael !

*An.* Djabal, I am thine !

*Dja.* Mine ? Djabal's ?—As if Hakeem had not  
been ?

*An.* Not Djabal's ? Say first, do you read my thought ?  
Why need I speak, if you can read my thought ?

*Dja.* I do not, I have said a thousand times.

*An.* (My secret 's safe, I shall surprise him yet !)

Djabal, I knew your secret from the first :

Djabal, when first I saw you . . . (by our porch

You leant, and pressed the tinkling veil away,

And one fringe fell behind your neck—I see !)

. . . I knew you were not human, for I said

“ This dim secluded house where the sea beats

“ Is heaven to me—my people's huts are hell

“ To them ; this august form will follow me,

“ Mix with the waves his voice will,—I have him ;

“ And they, the Prefect ! Oh, my happiness

“ Rounds to the full whether I choose or no !

“ His eyes met mine, he was about to speak,

“ His hand grew damp—surely he meant to say

“ He let me love him : in that moment's bliss

“ I shall forget my people pine for home—

“ They pass and they repass with pallid eyes ! ”

I vowed at once a certain vow ; this vow—

Not to embrace you till my tribe was saved.

Embrace me !

*Dja.* [*Apart.*] And she loved me ! Nought remained  
But that ! Nay, Anael, is the Prefect dead ?

*An.* Ah, you reproach me ! True, his death crowns  
all,

I know—or should know : and I would do much,  
Believe ! but, death ! Oh, you, who have known death,  
Would never doom the Prefect, were death fearful  
As we report !

Death !—a fire curls within us  
From the foot's palm, and fills up to the brain,  
Up, out, then shatters the whole bubble-shell  
Of flesh, perchance !

Death !—witness, I would die,  
Whate'er death be, would venture now to die  
For Khalil, for Maani—what for thee ?  
Nay but embrace me, Djabal, in assurance  
My vow will not be broken, for I must  
Do something to attest my faith in you,  
Be worthy you !

*Dja.* [*avoiding her.*] I come for that—to say  
Such an occasion is at hand : 't is like  
I leave you—that we part, my Anael,—part  
For ever !

*An.* We part ? Just so ! I have succumbed,—  
I am, he thinks, unworthy—and nought less

Will serve than such approval of my faith.

Then, we part not ! Remains there no way short  
Of that ? Oh not that !

Death !—yet a hurt bird  
Died in my hands ; its eyes filmed—“ Nay, it sleeps,”  
I said, “ will wake to-morrow well : ” ’t was dead.

*Dja.* I stand here and time fleets. Anael—I come  
To bid a last farewell to you : perhaps  
We never meet again. But, ere the Prefect  
Arrive . . .

*Enter KHALIL, breathlessly.*

*Kha.* He ’s here ! The Prefect ! Twenty guards,  
No more—no sign he dreams of danger. All  
Awaits thee only. Ayoob, Karshook, keep  
Their posts—wait but the deed’s accomplishment  
To join us with thy Druses to a man !  
Still holds his course the Nuncio—near and near  
The fleet from Candia steering !

*Dja.* [*Aside.*] All is lost !  
—Or won ?

*Kha.* And I have laid the sacred robe,  
The sword, the head-tiar, at the porch—the place  
Commanded. Thou wilt hear the Prefect’s trumpet.

*Dja.* Then I keep Anael,—him then, past recall,  
I slay—’t is forced on me ! As I began  
I must conclude—so be it !

*Kha.* For the rest,  
Save Loys, our foe’s solitary sword,  
All is so safe that . . . I will ne’er entreat

Thy post again of thee : tho' danger none,  
There must be glory only meet for thee  
In slaying the Prefect !

*An.* [*Aside.*]                      And 't is now that Djabal  
Would leave me !—in the glory meet for him !

*Dja.* As glory, I would yield the deed to you  
Or any Druse ; what peril there may be,  
I keep. [*Aside.*] All things conspire to hound me  
on !

Not now, my soul, draw back, at least ! Not now !  
The course is plain, howe'er obscure all else.  
Once offer this tremendous sacrifice,  
Prevent what else will be irreparable,  
Secure these transcendental helps, regain  
The Cedars—then let all dark clear itself !  
I slay him !

*Kha.*                      Anael, and no part for us !  
[*To Dja.*] Hast thou possessed her with . . .

*Dja.* [*to An.*]                                      Whom speak you to ?  
What is it you behold there ? Nay, this smile  
Turns stranger. Shudder you ? The man must die,  
As thousands of our race have died thro' him.  
One blow, and I discharge his weary soul  
From the flesh that pollutes it ! Let him fill  
Straight some new expiatory form, of earth  
Or sea, the reptile or some aëry thing :  
What is there in his death ?

*An.*                                      My brother said,  
Is there no part in it for us ?

*Dja.*

For Khalil,—

The trumpet will announce the Nuncio's entry ;  
 Here, I shall find the Prefect hastening  
 In the Pavilion to receive him—here  
 I slay the Prefect ; meanwhile Ayoob leads  
 The Nuncio with his guards within : once these  
 Secured in the outer hall, bid Ayoob bar  
 Entry or egress till I give the sign  
 Which waits the landing of the argosies  
 You will announce to me : this double sign  
 That justice is performed and help arrived,  
 When Ayoob shall receive, but not before,  
 Let him throw ope the palace doors, admit  
 The Druses to behold their tyrant, ere  
 We leave for ever this detested spot.  
 Go, Khalil, hurry all ! No pause, no pause !  
 Whirl on the dream, secure to wake anon !

*Kha.* What sign ? and who the bearer ?*Dja.*

Who shall show

My ring, admit to Ayoob. How she stands !  
 Have I not . . . I must have some task for her.  
 Anael, not that way ! 'T is the Prefect's chamber !  
 Anael, keep you the ring—give you the sign !  
 (It holds her safe amid the stir.) You will  
 Be faithful ?

*An.* [*taking the ring.*] I would fain be worthy of you ![*Trumpet without.**Kha.* He comes !*Dja.*

And I too come !

*An.* One word, but one !  
 Say, shall you be exalted at the deed ?  
 Then ? On the instant ?

*Dja.* I exalted ? What ?  
 He, there—we, thus—our wrongs revenged, our tribe .  
 Set free ? Oh, then shall I, assure yourself,  
 Shall you, shall each of us, be in his death  
 Exalted !

*Kha.* He is here !

*Dja.* Away—away ! *[They go.]*

*Enter the PREFECT with Guards, and LOYS.*

*The Prefect [to Guards.]* Back, I say, to the galley  
 every guard !

That 's my sole care now ; see each bench retains  
 Its complement of rowers ; I embark  
 O' the instant, since this Knight will have it so.  
 Alas me ! Could you have the heart, my Loys ?  
*[To a Guard who whispers.]* Oh, bring the holy Nuncio  
 here forthwith !

*[The Guards go.]*

Loys, a rueful sight, confess, to see  
 The grey discarded Prefect leave his post,  
 With tears i' the eye ! So, you are Prefect now ?  
 You depose me—you succeed me ? Ha, ha !

*Loys.* And dare you laugh, whom laughter less becomes  
 Than yesterday's forced meekness we beheld . .

*Pref.* —When you so eloquently pleaded, Loys,  
 For my dismissal from the post ?—Ah, meek  
 With cause enough, consult the Nuncio else !

And wish him the like meekness : for so staunch  
 A servant of the church can scarce have bought  
 His share in the Isle, and paid for it, hard pieces !  
 You 've my successor to condole with, Nuncio !  
 I shall be safe by then i' the galley, Loys !

*Loys.* You make as you would tell me you rejoice  
 To leave your scene of . . .

*Pref.* Trade in the dear Druses !  
 Blood and sweat traffic ? Spare what yesterday  
 We had enough of ! Drove I in the Isle  
 A profitable game ? Learn wit, my son,  
 Which you 'll need shortly ! Did it never breed  
 Suspicion in you, all was not pure profit,  
 When I, the insatiate . . . and so forth—was bent  
 On having a partaker in my rule ?  
 Why did I yield this Nuncio half the gain,  
 If not that I might also shift—what on him ?  
 Half of the peril, Loys !

*Loys.* Peril ?

*Pref.* Hark you !  
 I 'd love you if you 'd let me—this for reason,  
 You save my life at price of . . . well, say risk  
 At least, of yours. I came a long time since  
 To the Isle ; our Hospitallers bade me tame  
 These savage wizards, and reward myself—

*Loys.* The Knights who so repudiate your crime ?

*Pref.* Loys, the Knights ! we doubtless understood  
 Each other ; as for trusting to reward  
 From any friend beside myself . . . no, no !  
 I clutched mine on the spot, when it was sweet,

And I had taste for it. I felt these wizards  
Alive—was sure they were not on me, only  
When I was on them : but with age comes caution :  
And stinging pleasures please less and sting more.  
Year by year, fear by fear ! The girls were brighter  
Than ever ('faith, there 's yet one Anael left,  
I set my heart upon—Oh, prithee, let  
That brave new sword lie still !)—These joys looked  
brighter,  
But silenter the town, too, as I passed.  
With this alcove's delicious memories  
Began to mingle visions of gaunt fathers,  
Quick-eyed sons, fugitives from the mine, the oar,  
Stealing to catch me : brief, when I began  
To quake with fear—(I think I hear the Chapter  
Solicited to let me leave, now all  
Worth staying for was gained and gone !)—I say,  
Just when for the remainder of my life  
All methods of escape seemed lost—that then  
Up should a young hot-headed Loys spring,  
Talk very long and loud,—in fine, compel  
The Knights to break their whole arrangement, have me  
Home for pure shame—from this safehold of mine  
Where but ten thousand Druses seek my life,  
To my wild place of banishment, San Gines  
By Murcia, where my three fat manors lying,  
Purchased by gains here and the Nuncio's gold,  
Are all I have to guard me,—that such fortune  
Should fall to me, I hardly could expect !  
Therefore I say, I 'd love you !



*Loys.*

Can it be ?

I play into your hands then ? Oh no, no !

The Venerable Chapter, the Great Order

Sunk o' the sudden into fiends of the pit ?

But I will back—will yet unveil you !

*Pref.*

Me ?

To whom ?—perhaps Sir Galeas, who in Chapter

Shook his white head thrice—and some dozen times

My hand next morning shook, for value paid !

To that Italian saint, Sir Cosimo ?—

Indignant at my wringing year by year

A thousand bezants from the coral divers,

As you recounted ; felt the saint aggrieved ?

Well might he—I allowed for his half-share

Merely one hundred ! To Sir . . .

*Loys.*

See ! you dare

Inculcate the whole Order ; yet should I,

A youth, a sole voice, have the power to change

Their evil way, had they been firm in it ?

Answer me !

*Pref.*

Oh, the son of Bretagne's Duke,

And that son's wealth, the father's influence, too,

And the young arm, we 'll even say, my Loys,

—The fear of losing or diverting these

Into another channel, by gainsaying

A novice too abruptly, could not influence

The Order ! You might join, for aught they cared,

Their red-cross rivals of the Temple ! Well,

I thank you for my part, at all events.

Stay here till they withdraw you ! You 'll inhabit  
 My palace—sleep, perchance, in the alcove  
 Whither I go to meet our holy friend.  
 Good ! and now disbelieve me if you can,—  
 This is the first time for long years I enter  
 Thus [*lifts the arras*] without feeling just as if I lifted  
 The lid up of my tomb.

*Loys.*

They share his crime !

God's punishment will overtake you yet.

*Prof.* Thank you it does not ! Pardon this last flash :  
 I bear a sober visage presently  
 With the disinterested Nuncio here—  
 His purchase-money safe at Murcia, too !  
 Let me repeat—for the first time, no draught  
 Coming as from a sepulchre salutes me.  
 When we next meet, this folly may have passed,  
 We 'll hope. Ha, ha ! [*Goes through the arras.*]

*Loys.*

Assure me but . . . he 's gone !

He could not lie. Then what have I escaped,  
 I, who had so nigh given up happiness  
 For ever, to be linked with him and them !  
 Oh, opportunist of discoveries ! I  
 Their Knight ? I utterly renounce them all !  
 Hark ! What, he meets by this the Nuncio ? yes,  
 The same hyæna groan-like laughter ! Quick—  
 To Djabal ! I am one of them at last,  
 These simple-hearted Druses—Anael's tribe !  
 Djabal ! She 's mine at last. Djabal, I say ! [*Goes.*]

## ACT IV.

*Enter DJABAL.*

*Dja.* Let me but slay the Prefect. The end now !  
To-morrow will be time enough to pry  
Into the means I took : suffice, they served,  
Ignoble as they were, to hurl revenge  
True to its object. [*Seeing the robe, etc. disposed.*

Mine should never so  
Have hurried to accomplishment ! Thee, Djabal,  
Far other mood befitted ! Calm the Robe  
Should clothe this doom's awarder !

[*Taking the robe.*] Shall I dare  
Assume my nation's Robe ? I am at least  
A Druse again, chill Europe's policy  
Drops from me : I dare take the Robe. Why not  
The Tiar ? I rule the Druses, and what more  
Betokens it than rule ?—yet—yet—

[*Lays down the tiar.*  
[*Footsteps in the alcove.*] He comes ! [*Taking the sword.*  
If the Sword serve, let the Tiar lie ! So, feet  
Clogged with the blood of twenty years can fall  
Thus lightly ! Round me, all ye ghosts ! He 'll lift . . .  
Which arm to push the arras wide ?—or both ?  
Stab from the neck down to the heart—there stay !  
Near he comes—nearer—the next footstep ! Now !

[*As he dashes aside the arras, ANAËL is discovered.*

Ha! Anael! Nay, my Anael, can it be?  
Heard you the trumpet? I must slay him here,  
And here you ruin all. Why speak you not?  
Anael, the Prefect comes! [ANAEL screams.] So slow  
to feel

'T is not a sight for you to look upon?  
A moment's work—but such work! Till you go,  
I must be idle—idle, I risk all!

[Pointing to her hair.

Those locks are well, and you are beauteous thus,  
But with the dagger 't is, I have to do!

An. With mine!

Dja. Blood—Anael?

An. Djabal, 't is thy deed!

It must be! I had hoped to claim it mine—  
Be worthy thee—but I must needs confess  
'T was not I, but thyself . . not I have . . Djabal!  
Speak to me!

Dja. Oh, my punishment!

An. Speak to me

While I can speak! touch me, despite the blood!  
When the command passed from thy soul to mine,  
I went, fire leading me, muttering of thee,  
And the approaching exaltation,—“make  
“One sacrifice!” I said,—and he sat there,  
Bade me approach; and, as I did approach,  
Thy fire with music burst into my brain:  
'T was but a moment's work, thou saidst—perchance  
It may have been so! Well, it is thy deed!

*Dja.* It is my deed !

*An.* His blood all this !—this ! and . .

And more ! Sustain me, Djabal ! Wait not—now

Let flash thy glory ! Change thyself and me !

It must be ! Ere the Druses flock to us !

At least confirm me ! Djabal, blood gushed forth—

He was our tyrant—but I looked he'd fall

Prone as asleep—why else is death called sleep ?

Sleep ? He bent o'er his breast ! 'T is sin, I know,—

Punish me, Djabal, but wilt thou let him ?

Be it thou that punishest, not he—who creeps

On his red breast—is here ! 'T is the small groan

Of a child—no worse ! Bestow the new life, then !

Too swift it cannot be, too strange, surpassing !

*[Following him up and down.*

Now ! Change us both ! Change me and change thou !

*Dja.* *[sinks on his knees.]* Thus !

Behold my change ! You have done nobly ! I !—

*An.* Can Hakeem kneel ?

*Dja.* No Hakeem, and scarce Djabal !

I have spoken falsely, and this woe is come.

No—hear me ere scorn blast me ! Once and ever,

The deed is mine ! Oh think upon the past !

*An.* *[to herself.]* Did I strike once, or twice, or many times ?

*Dja.* I came to lead my tribe where, bathed in glooms,

Doth Bahumid the Renovator sleep :

Anael, I saw my tribe . I said, “ Without

"A miracle this cannot be"—I said

"Be there a miracle!"—for I saw you!

*An.* His head lies south the portal!

*Dia.*

—Weighed with this

The general good, how could I choose my own?

What matter was my purity of soul?

Little by little I engaged myself—

Heaven would accept me for its instrument,

I hoped: I said Heaven had accepted me!

*An.* Is it this blood breeds dreams in me?—Who said

You were not Hakeem? And your miracles—

The fire that plays innocuous round your form?

*[Again changing her whole manner.]*

Ah, thou wouldst try me—thou art Hakeem still!

*Dja.* Woe—woe! As if the Druses of the Mount  
(Scarce Arabs, even there, but here, in the Isle,  
Beneath their former selves) should comprehend  
The subtle lore of Europe! A few secrets  
That would not easily affect the meanest  
Of the crowd there, could wholly subjugate  
The best of our poor tribe! Again that eye?

*An.* *[after a pause springs to his neck.]* Djabal, in this  
there can be no deceit!

Why, Djabal, were you human only,—think,

Maani is but human, Khalil human,

Loys is human even—did their words

Haunt me, their looks pursue me? Shame on you

So to have tried me! Rather, shame on me

So to need trying ! Could I, with the Prefect  
 And the blood, there—could I see only you ?  
 —Hang by your neck over this gulf of blood ?  
 Speak, I am saved ! Speak, Djabal ! Am I saved ?

*[As DJABAL slowly unclasps her arms, and puts her  
 silently from him.]*

Hakeem would save me ! Thou art Djabal ! Crouch !  
 Bow to the dust, thou basest of our kind !  
 The pile of thee, I reared up to the cloud—  
 Full, midway, of our fathers' trophied tombs,  
 Based on the living rock, devoured not by  
 The unstable desert's jaws of sand,—falls prone !  
 Fire, music, quenched : and now thou liest there  
 A ruin, obscene creatures will moan through !  
 —Let us come, Djabal !

*Dja.* Whither come ?

*An.* At once—

Lest so it grow intolerable. Come !  
 Will I not share it with thee ? Best at once !  
 So, feel less pain ! Let them deride,—thy tribe  
 Now trusting in thee,—Loys shall deride !  
 Come to them, hand in hand, with me !

*Dja.* Where come ?

*An.* Where?—to the Druses thou hast wronged ! Con-  
 fess,

Now that the end is gained—(I love thee now—)  
 That thou hast so deceived them—(perchance love thee  
 Better than ever !) Come, receive their doom  
 Of infamy ! O, best of all I love thee !

Shame with the man, no triumph with the God,  
Be mine ! Come !

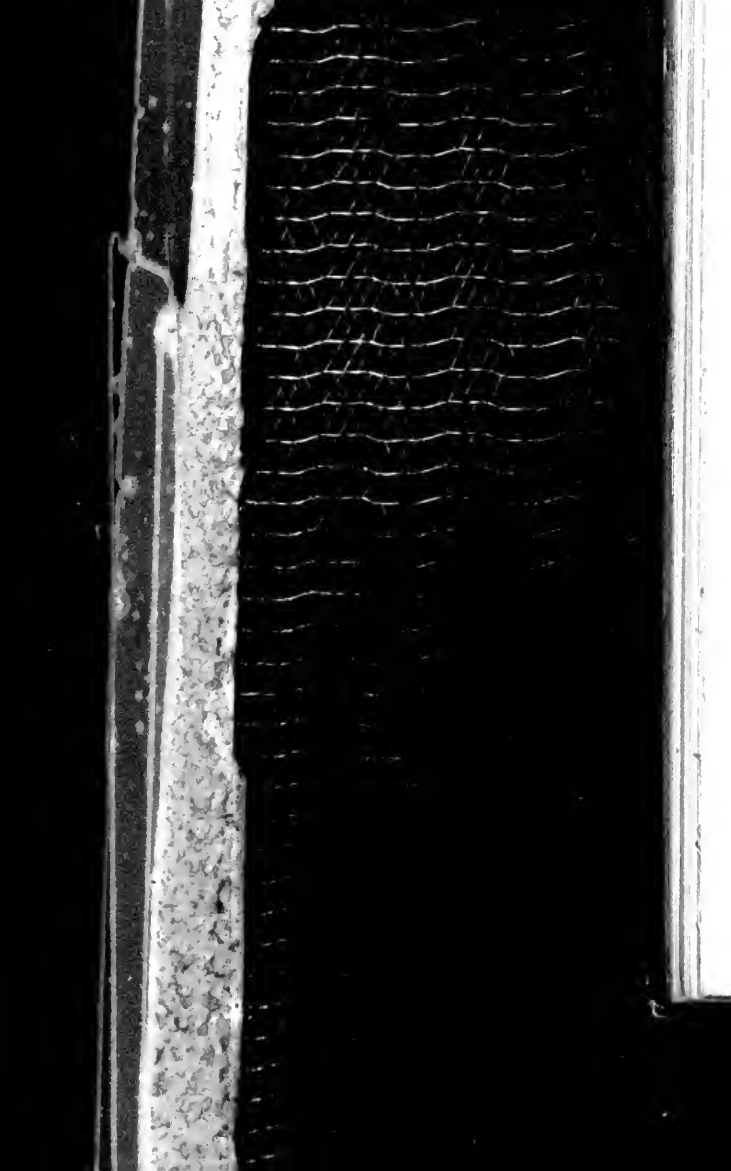
*Dja.* Never ! More shame yet ? and why ?  
Why ? You have called this deed mine—it is mine !  
And with it I accept its circumstance.  
How can I longer strive with fate ? The past  
Is past : my false life shall henceforth show true.  
Hear me ! The argosies touch land by this ;  
They bear us to fresh scenes and happier skies :  
What if we reign together ?—if we keep  
Our secret for the Druses' good ?—by means  
Of even their superstition, plant in them  
New life ? I learn from Europe : all who seek  
Man's good must awe man, by such means as these.  
We two will be divine to them—we are !  
All great works in this world spring from the ruins  
Of greater projects—ever, on our earth,  
Babels men block out, Babylons they build.  
I wrest the weapon from your hand ! I claim  
The deed ! Retire ! You have my ring—you bar  
All access to the Nuncio till the forces  
From Venice land !

*An.* Thou wilt feign Hakeem then ?

*Dja.* [*putting the Tiara of Hakeem on his head.*] And  
from this moment that I dare open wide  
Eyes that till now refused to see, begins  
My true dominion : for I know myself,  
And what am I to personate. No word ?

[ANAEI goes.]





I understood at once your urgency  
That I should leave this isle for Rhodes ; I felt  
What you were loath to speak—your need of help.  
I have fulfilled the task, that earnestness  
Imposed on me ; have, face to face, confronted  
The Prefect in full Chapter, charged on him  
The enormities of his long rule : he stood  
Mute, offered no defence, no crime denied.  
On which, I spoke of you, and of your tribe,  
Your faith so like our own, and all you urged  
Of old to me—I spoke, too, of your goodness,  
Your patience—brief, I hold henceforth the Isle  
In charge, am nominally lord,—but you,  
You are associated in my rule—  
Are the true Prefect ! Ay, such faith had they  
In my assurance of your loyalty  
(For who insults an imbecile old man ?)  
That we assume the Prefecture this hour !  
You gaze at me ! Hear greater wonders yet—  
I throw down all the fabric I have built !  
These Knights, I was prepared to worship . . . but  
Of that another time ; what 's now to say,  
Is—I shall never be a Knight ! Oh, Djabal,  
Here first I throw all prejudice aside,  
And call you brother ! I am Druse like you !  
My wealth, my friends, my power, are wholly yours,  
Your people's, which is now my people : for  
There is a maiden of your tribe, I love—  
She loves me—Khalil's sister——



No provocation ! 'T is a long devised  
Conspiracy : the whole tribe is involved.  
He is their Khalif—'t is on that pretence—  
Their mighty Khalif who died long ago,  
And now comes back to life and light again—  
All is just now revealed, I know not how,  
By one of his confederates—who, struck  
With horror at this murder, first apprised  
The Nuncio. As 't was said, we find this Djabal  
Here where we take him.

*Dja.* [*Aside.*] Who broke faith with me ?

*Loys.* [*to DJABAL.*] Hear'st thou ? Speak ! Till thou  
speak, I keep off these,

Or die with thee. Deny this story ! Thou  
A Khalif, an impostor ? Thou, my friend,  
Whose tale was of an inoffensive race,  
With . . . but thou know'st—on that tale's truth I pledged  
My faith before the Chapter : what art thou ?

*Dja.* Loys, I am as thou hast heard. All 's true !  
No more concealment ! As these tell thee, all  
Was long since planned. Our Druses are enough  
To crush this handful : the Venetians land  
Even now in our behalf. Loys, we part !  
Thou, serving much, wouldst fain have served me more ;  
It might not be. I thank thee. As thou hearest,  
We are a separated tribe : farewell !

*Loys.* Oh where will truth be found now ? Canst  
thou so

Belie the Druses ? Do they share thy crime ?

Those thou professest of our Breton stock,  
Are partners with thee? Why, I saw but now  
Khalil, my friend—he spoke with me—no word  
Of this! and Anael—whom I love, and who  
Loves me—she spoke no word of this!

*Dja.*

Poor boy!

Anael, who loves thee? Khalil, fast thy friend?  
We, offsets from a wandering Count of Dreux?  
No—older than the oldest—princelier  
Than Europe's princeliest tribe are we. Enough  
For thee, that on our simple faith we found  
A monarchy to shame your monarchies  
At their own trick and secret of success.  
The child of this our tribe shall laugh upon  
The palace-step of him whose life ere night  
Is forfeit, as that child shall know, and yet  
Shall laugh there! What, we Druses wait forsooth  
The kind interposition of a boy  
—Can only save ourselves if thou concede?  
—Khalil admire thee? He is my right hand,  
My delegate!—Anael accept thy love?  
She is my bride!

*Loys.*

Thy bride? She one of them?

*Dja.* My bride!

*Loys.*

And she retains her glorious eyes!

She, with those eyes, has shared this miscreant's guilt!  
Ah—who but she directed me to find  
Djabal within the Prefect's chamber? Khalil  
Bade me seek Djabal there, too! All is truth!

What spoke the Prefect worse of them than this?  
Did the Church ill to institute long since  
Perpetual warfare with such serpentry?  
And I—have I desired to shift my part,  
Evade my share in her design? 'T is well!

*Dja.* Loys, I have wronged thee—but unwittingly:  
I never thought there was in thee a virtue  
That could attach itself to what thou deemest  
A race below thine own. I wronged thee, Loys,  
But that is over: all is over now,  
Save the protection I ensure against  
My people's anger. By their Khalif's side,  
Thou art secure and may'st depart: so, come!

*Loys.* Thy side?—I take protection at thy hand?

*Enter other Guards.*

*Guards.* Fly with him! Fly, Sir Loys! 'T is too  
true!

And only by his side thou may'st escape!  
The whole tribe is in full revolt: they flock  
About the palace—will be here—on thee—  
And there are twenty of us, we the Guards  
O' the Nuncio, to withstand them! Even we  
Had stayed to meet our death in ignorance,  
But that one Druse, a single faithful Druse,  
Made known the horror to the Nuncio. Fly!  
The Nuncio stands aghast. At least let us  
Escape thy wrath, O Hakeem! We are nought  
In thy tribe's persecution! [*To Loys.*] Keep by him!  
They hail him Hakeem, their dead Prince returned:

He is their God, they shout, and at his beck  
Are life and death !

[*Loys springing at the khandjar DJABAL had thrown down, seizes him by the throat.*]

Thus by his side am I !

Thus I resume my knighthood and its warfare,  
Thus end thee, miscreant, in thy pride of place !  
Thus art thou caught. Without, thy dupes may cluster  
Friends aid thee, foes avoid thee,—thou art Hakeem,  
How say they ?—God art thou ! but also here  
Is the least, youngest, meanest the Church calls  
Her servant, and his single arm avails  
To aid her as she lists. I rise, and thou  
Art crushed ! Hordes of thy Druses flock without :  
Here thou hast me, who represent the Cross,  
Honour and Faith, 'gainst Hell, Mahound and thee !  
Die ! [*DJABAL remains calm.*] Implore my mercy,  
Hakeem, that my scorn  
May help me ! Nay, I cannot ply thy trade ;  
I am no Druse, no stabber : and thine eye,  
Thy form, are too much as they were—my friend  
Had such ! Speak ! Beg for mercy at my foot !

[*DJABAL still silent.*]

Heaven could not ask so much of me—not, sure,  
So much ! I cannot kill him so !

Thou art

Strong in thy cause, then !—dost outbrave us, then !  
Heardst thou that one of thine accomplices,  
Thy very people, has accused thee ? Meet

His charge ! Thou hast not even slain the Prefect  
As thy own vile creed warrants. Meet that Druse !  
Come with me and disprove him—be thou tried  
By him, nor seek appeal ! Promise me this,  
Or I will do God's office ! What, shalt thou  
Boast of assassins at thy beck, yet truth  
Want even an executioner ? Consent,  
Or I will strike—look in my face—I will !

*Dja.* Give me again my khandjar, if thou darest !

[*Loys gives it.*]

Let but one Druse accuse me, and I plunge  
This home. A Druse betray me ? Let us go !

[*Aside.*] Who has betrayed me ? [Shouts without.

Hearest thou ? I hear

No plainer than long years ago I heard  
That shout—but in no dream now ! They return !  
Wilt thou be leader with me, Loys ? Well !

---

## ACT V.

*The Uninitiated Druses, filling the hall tumultuously, and speaking together.*

Here flock we, obeying the summons. Lo, Hakeem hath appeared, and the Prefect is dead, and we return to Lebanon ! My manufacture of goats' fleece must, I doubt, soon fall away there. Come, old Nasif—link thine arm in mine—we fight, if needs be. Come, what is a great



fight-word?—"Lebanon?" (My daughter—my daughter!)  
 —But is Khalil to have the office of Hamza?—Nay,  
 rather, if he be wise, the monopoly of henna and cloves.  
 Where is Hakeem?—The only prophet I ever saw,  
 prophesied at Cairo once, in my youth: a little black  
 Copht, dressed all in black too, with a great stripe of  
 yellow cloth flapping down behind him like the back-fin  
 of a water-serpent. Is this he? Biamrallah! Biamreh!  
 HAKEEM!

*Enter the NUNCIO with Guards.*

*Nuncio* [*to his Attendants.*] Hold both, the sorcerer  
 and this accomplice

Ye talk of, that accuseth him! And tell

Sir Loys he is mune, the Church's hope:

Bid him approve himself our Knight indeed!

Lo, this black disemboгуing of the Isle!

[*To the Druses.*] Ah children, what a sight for these old  
 eyes

That kept themselves alive this voyage through

To smile their very last on you! I came

To gather one and all you wandering sheep

Into my fold, as though a father came . . .

As though, in coming, a father should . . .

[*To his Guards.*] (Ten, twelve  
 —Twelve guards of you, and not an outlet? None?

The wizards stop each avenue? Keep close!)

[*To the Druses.*] As if one came to a son's house, I say,

So did I come—no guard with me—to find . . .

Alas—alas!

*A Druse.* Who is the old man ?

*Another.*

Oh, ye are to shout !

Children, he styles you.

*Druses.*

Ay, the Prefect's slain !

Glory to the Khalif, our Father !

*Nuncio.*

Even so !

I find, (ye prompt aright) your father slain !

While most he plotted for your good, that father

(Alas, how kind, ye never knew)—lies slain !

[*Aside.*] (And hell's worm gnaw the glozing knave—with  
me,

For being duped by his cajoleries !

Are these the Christians ? These the docile crew

My bezants went to make me Bishop o'er ?)

[*To his Attendants, who whisper.*] What say ye does this  
wizard style himself ?

Hakeem ? Biamrallah ? The third Fatemite ?

What is this jargon ? He—the insane Khalif,

Dead near three hundred years ago, come back

In flesh and blood again ?

*Druses.*

He mutters ! Hear ye ?

He is blaspheming Hakeem. The old man

Is our dead Prefect's friend ! Tear him !

*Nuncio.*

Ye dare not !

I stand here with my five-and-seventy years,

The Patriarch's power behind me, God's above !

Those years have witnessed sin enough ; ere now

Misguided men arose against their lords,

And found excuse ; but ye, to be enslaved

By sorceries, cheats—alas ! the same tricks, tried  
 On my poor children in this nook of the earth,  
 Could triumph, that have been successively  
 Exploded, laughed to scorn, all nations through :

“ *Romaioi, Ioudaioite kai proselutoi,*

“ Cretes and Arabians ”—you are duped the last !

Said I, refrain from tearing me ? I pray ye

Tear me ! Shall I return to tell the Patriarch

That so much love was wasted—every gift

Rejected, from his benison I brought,

Down to the galley-full of bezants, sunk

An hour since at the harbour's mouth, by that . . .

That . . . never will I speak his hated name !

[*To his Servants.*] What was the name his fellow slip-  
 fether

Called their arch-wizard by ? [*they whisper.*] Oh, Djabal  
 was 't ?

*Druses.* But how a sorcerer ? false wherein ?

*Nuncio.*

(Ay, Djabal )

How false ? Ye know not, Djabal has confessed . . .

Nay, that by tokens found on him we learn . . .

What I sailed hither solely to divulge—

How by his spells the demons were allured

To seize you : not that these be aught save lies

And mere illusions. Is this clear ? I say,

By measures such as these, he would have led you

Into a monstrous ruin : follow ye ?

Say, shall ye perish for his sake, my sons ?

*Druses.* Hark ye !

*Nuncio.* —Be of one privilege amerced?  
 No! Infinite the Patriarch's mercies are!  
 No! With the Patriarch's licence, still I bid  
 Tear him to pieces who misled you! Haste!

*Druses.* The old man's beard shakes, and his eyes are white fire! After all, I know nothing of Djabal beyond what Karshook says; he knows but what Khalil says, who knows just what Djabal says himself. Now, the little Copht Prophet, I saw at Cairo in my youth, began by promising each bystander three full measures of wheat . . .

*Enter KHALIL and the initiated Druses.*

*Kha.* Venice and her deliverance are at hand!  
 Their fleet stands through the harbour! Hath he slain  
 The Prefect yet? Is Djabal's change come yet?

*Nuncio.* [*to Attendants.*] What's this of Venice? Who's  
 this boy?

[*Attendants whisper.*] One Khalil?  
 Djabal's accomplice, Loys called, but now,  
 The only Druse, save Djabal's self, to fear?  
 [*To the Druses.*] I cannot hear ye with these aged  
 ears:

Is it so? Ye would have my troops assist?  
 Doth he abet him in his sorceries?  
 Down with the cheat, guards, as my children bid!

[*They spring at KHALIL; as he beats them back.*

Stay! No more bloodshed! Spare deluded youth!  
 Whom seek'st thou? (I will teach him)—whom, my  
 child?

Thou know'st not what these know, what these declare.  
I am an old man as thou seest—have done  
With life ; and what should move me but the truth ?  
Art thou the only fond one of thy tribe ?  
'T is I interpret for thy tribe !

*Kha.*

Oh, this

Is the expected Nuncio ! Druses, hear—  
Endure ye this ? Unworthy to partake  
The glory Hakeem gains you ! While I speak,  
The ships touch land : who makes for Lebanon ?  
They plant the winged lion in these halls !  
*Nuncio.* [*Aside.*] If it be true ! Venice ?—Oh, never  
true !

Yet Venice would so gladly thwart our Knights,  
And fain get footing here, stand close by Rhodes !  
Oh, to be duped this way !

*Kha.*

Ere he appear

And lead you gloriously, repent, I say !

*Nuncio.* [*Aside.*] Nor any way to stretch the arch  
wizard stark

Ere the Venetians come ? Cut off the head,  
The trunk were easily stilled. [*To the Druses.*] He ?  
Bring him forth !

Since so you needs will have it, I assent !  
You 'd judge him, say you, on the spot ? confound  
The sorcerer in his very circle ? Where 's  
Our short black-bearded sallow friend who said  
He 'd earn the Patriarch's guerdon by one stab ?  
Bring Djabal forth at once !

*Druses.*

Ay, bring him forth!

The Patriarch drives a trade in oil and silk,  
And we 're the Patriarch's children—true men, we!  
Where is the glory? Show us all the glory!

*Kha.* You dare not so insult him! What, not see . . .  
(I tell thee, Nuncio, these are uninstructed,  
Untrusted—they know nothing of our Khalif!)  
—Not see that if he lets a doubt arise  
'T is but to give yourselves the chance of seeming  
To have some influence in your own Return!  
That all may say ye would have trusted him  
Without the all-convincing glory—ay,  
And did! Embrace the occasion, friends! For, think—  
What wonder when his change takes place? But now  
For your sakes, he should not reveal himself!  
No—could I ask and have, I would not ask  
The change yet!

*Enter DJABAL and LOYS.*

Spite of all, reveal thyself!

I had said, pardon them for me—for Anael—  
For our sakes pardon these besotted men—  
Ay, for thine own—they hurt not thee! Yet now  
One thought swells in me and keeps down all else.  
This Nuncio couples shame with thee, has called  
Imposture thy whole course, all bitter things  
Has said: he is but an old fretful man!  
Hakeem—nay, I must call thee Hakeem now—  
Reveal thyself! See! Where is Anael?—See!

*Loys.* [*to DJA.*] Here are thy people ! Keep thy word to me !

*Dja.* Who of my people hath accused me ?

*Nuncio.*

So :

So this is Djabal, Hakeem, and what not ?

A fit deed, Loys, for thy first Knight's day !

May it be augury of thy after-life !

Ever prove truncheon of the Church as now

That, Nuncio of the Patriarch, having charge

Of the Isle here, I claim thee [*turning to DJA.*] as these  
bid me,

Forfeit for murder done thy lawful prince,

Thou conjurer that peep'st and mutterest !

Why should I hold thee from their hands ? (Spells,  
children ?

But hear how I dispose of all his spells !)

Thou art a prophet ?—wouldst entice thy tribe

From me ?—thou workest miracles ? (Attend !

Let him but move me with his spells !) I, Nuncio . . .

*Dja.* . . Which how thou camest to be, I say not now,  
Though I have also been at Stamboul, Luke !

—Ply thee with spells, forsooth ! What need of spells ?

If Venice, in her Admiral's person, stoop

To ratify thy compact with her foe,

The Hospitallers, for this Isle—withdraw

Her warrant of the deed which reinstates

My people in their freedom, tricked away

By him I slew,—refuse to convoy us

To Lebanon and keep the Isle we leave—

—Then will be time to try what spells can do !  
Dost thou dispute the Republic's power ?

*Nuncio.*

Lo ye !

He tempts me too, the wily exorcist !  
No ! The renowned Republic was and is  
The Patriarch's friend : 't is not for courting Venice  
That I—that these implore thy blood of me !  
Lo ye, the subtle miscreant ! Ha, so subtle ?  
Ye, Druses, hear him ! Will ye be deceived ?  
How he evades me ! Where 's the miracle  
He works ? I bid him to the proof—fish up  
Your galley full of bezants that he sank !  
That were a miracle ! One miracle !  
Enough of trifling, for it chafes my years.  
I am the Nuncio, Druses ! I stand forth  
To save you from the good Republic's rage  
When she shall find her fleet was summoned here  
To aid the mummeries of a knave like this !

[*As the Druses hesitate, his Attendants whisper.*]

Ah, well suggested ! Why, we hold the while  
One who, his close confederate till now,  
Confesses Djabal at the last a cheat,  
And every miracle a cheat ! Who throws me  
His head ? I make three offers, once I offer,—  
And twice . . .

*Dja.*

Let who moves perish at my foot !

*Kha.* Thanks, Hakeem, thanks ! Oh, Anael, Maani,  
Why tarry they ?

*Druses* [*to each other.*] He can ! He can ! Live fire—



[*To the NUNCIO,*] I say he can, old man ! Thou know'st him not—

Live fire like that thou seest now in his eyes,  
Plays fawning round him. See ! The change begins !  
All the brow lightens as he lifts his arm !  
Look not at me ! It was not I !

*Dja.* What Druse  
Accused me, as he saith ? I bid each bone  
Crumble within that Druse ! None, Loys, none  
Of my own people, as thou said'st, have raised  
A voice against me.

*Nuncio.* [*Aside.*] Venice to come ! Death !

*Dja.* [*continuing.*] Confess and go unscathed, however false !

Seest thou my Druses, Luke ? I would submit  
To thy pure malice did one Druse confess !  
How said I, Loys ?

*Nuncio.* [*to his Attendants who whisper.*] Ah, ye counsel so ?

[*Aloud.*] Bring in the witness, then, who, first of all,  
Disclosed the treason ! Now I have thee, wizard !  
Ye hear that ? If one speaks, he bids you tear him  
Joint after joint : well then, one does speak ! One,  
Befooled by Djabal, even as yourselves,  
But who hath voluntarily proposed  
To expiate, by confessing thus, the fault  
Of having trusted him.

[*They bring in a veiled Druse.*]

*Loys.*

Now, Djabal, now !

*Nuncio.* Friend, Djabal fronts thee! Make a ring  
sons!—Speak!

Expose this Djabal—what he was, and how;  
The wiles he used, the aims he cherished; all,  
Explicitly as late 't was spoken to these  
My servants: I absolve and pardon thee.

*Loy.* Thou hast the dagger ready, Djabal?

*Dja.*

Speak,

Recreant!

*Druses.* Stand back, fool! farther! Suddenly  
You shall see some huge serpent glide from under  
The empty vest, or down will thunder crash!  
Back, Khalil!

*Kha.* I go back? Thus go I back!

[*To AN.*] Unveil! Nay, thou shalt face the Khalif!  
Thus!

[*He tears away ANAEL'S veil; DJABAL folds his arms  
and bows his head: the Druses fall back: LOYS  
springs from the side of DJABAL and the NUNCIO.*]

*Loy.* Then she was true—she only of them all!  
True to her eyes—may keep those glorious eyes,  
And now be mine, once again mine! Oh, Anael!  
Dared I think thee a partner in his crime—  
That blood could soil that hand? nay, 't is mine—Anael,  
—Not mine?—Who offer thee before all these  
My heart, my sword, my name—so thou wilt say  
That Djabal, who affirms thou art his bride,  
Lies—say but that he lies!

*Dja.*

Thou, Anael?

*Loys.* Nay Djabal, nay, one chance for me—the last !  
 Thou hast had every other ; thou hast spoken  
 Days, nights, what falsehood listed thee—let me  
 Speak first now ; I will speak now !

*Nuncio.*

*Loys, pause !*

Thou art the Duke's son, Bretagne's choicest stock,  
 Loys of Dreux, God's sepulchre's first sword :  
 This wilt thou spit on, this degrade, this trample  
 To earth ?

*Loys.* [*to AN.*] Who had foreseen that one day, Loys  
 Would stake these gifts against some other good  
 In the whole world ? I give them thee ! I would  
 My strong will might bestow real shape on them,  
 That I might see, with my own eyes, thy foot  
 Tread on their very neck ! 'T is not by gifts  
 I put aside this Djabal : we will stand—  
 We do stand, see, two men ! Djabal, stand forth  
 Who 's worth her, I or thou ? I—who for Anael  
 Uprightly, purely kept my way, the long  
 True way—left thee each by-path, boldly lived  
 Without the lies and blood,—or thou, or thou ?  
 Me !—love me, Anael ! Leave the blood and him !  
 [*To DJA.*] Now speak—now, quick on this that I have  
 said,—

Thou with the blood, speak if thou art a man !

*Dja.* [*to AN.*] And was it thou betrayedst me ? 'T is  
 well !

I have deserved this of thee, and submit.  
 Nor 't is much evil thou inflicttest : life

Ends here. The cedars shall not wave for us :  
For there was crime, and must be punishment.  
See fate ! By thee I was seduced ! by thee  
I perish : yet do I—can I repent ?  
I with my Arab instinct, thwarted ever  
By my Frank policy,—and with, in turn,  
My Frank brain, thwarted by my Arab heart—  
While these remained in equipoise, I lived  
—Nothing ; had either been predominant,  
As a Frank schemer or an Arab mystic,  
I had been something ;—now, each has destroyed  
The other—and behold, from out their crash,  
A third and better nature rises up—  
My mere man's-nature ! And I yield to it :  
I love thee, I who did not love before !

*An.* Djabal !

*Dja.* It seemed love, but it was not love—  
How could I love while thou adoredst me ?  
Now thou despisest, art above me so  
Immeasurably ! Thou, no other, doomest  
My death now ; this my steel shall execute  
Thy judgment ; I shall feel thy hand in it !  
Oh, luxury to worship, to submit,  
Transcended, doomed to death by thee !

*An.*

My Djabal !

*Dja.* Dost hesitate ? I force thee then ! Approach,  
Druses ! for I am out of reach of fate ;  
No further evil waits me. Speak the doom !  
Hear, Druses, and hear, Nuncio, and hear, Loys !

An. HAKEEM !

[*She falls dead.*

[*The Druses scream, grovelling before him.*

Ah Hakeem !—not on me thy wrath !

Biamrallah, pardon ! never doubted I !

Ha, dog, how sayest thou ?

[*They surround and seize the NUNCIO and his Guards.*

LOYS flings himself upon the body of ANAEL, on which DJABAL continues to gaze as stupefied.

Nuncio.

Caitiffs ! Have ye eyes ?

Whips, racks should teach you ! What, his fools ? his dupes ?

Leave me ! unhand me !

Kha. [*approaching DJABAL timidly.*] Save her for my sake !

She was already thine ; she would have shared

To-day thine exaltation : think, this day

Her hair was plaited thus because of thee !

Yes, feel the soft bright hair—feel !

Nuncio. [*struggling with those who have seized him.*]

What, because

His leman dies for him ? You think it hard

To die ? Oh, would you were at Rhodes, and choice

Of deaths should suit you !

Kha. [*bending over ANAEL'S body.*] Just restore her life !

So little does it ! there—the eyelids tremble !

'T was not my breath that made them : and the lips

Move of themselves. I could restore her life !

Hakeem, we have forgotten—have presumed

On our free converse : we are better taught.  
 See, I kiss—how I kiss thy garment's hem  
 For her ! She kisses it—Oh, take her deed  
 In mine ! Thou dost believe now, Anael?—See,  
 She smiles ! Were her lips open o'er the teeth  
 Thus, when I spoke first ? She believes in thee !  
 Go not without her to the cedars, lord !  
 Or leave us both—I cannot go alone !  
 I have obeyed thee, if I dare so speak :  
 Hath Hakeem thus forgot all Djabal knew ?  
 Thou feelest then my tears fall hot and fast  
 Upon thy hand, and yet thou speakest not ?  
 Ere the Venetian trumpet sound—ere thou  
 Exalt thyself, O Hakeem ! save thou her !

*Nuncio.* And the accursed Republic will arrive  
 And find me in their toils—dead, very like,  
 Under their feet !

What way—not one way yet  
 To foil them ? None ? *[Observing DJABAL's face.]*

What ails the Khalif ? Ah,  
 That ghastly face ! A way to foil them yet !  
*[To the Druses.]* Look to your Khalif, Druses ! Is that  
 face

God Hakeem's ? Where is triumph,—where is . . . what  
 Said he of exaltation—bath he promised  
 So much to-day ? Why then, exalt thyself !  
 Cast off that husk, thy form, set free thy soul  
 In splendour ! Now, bear witness ! here I stand—  
 I challenge him exalt himself, and I

Become, for that, a Druse like all of you !

*The Druses.* Exalt thyself ! Exalt thyself, O Hakeem !

*Dja.* [*advances.*] I can confess now all from first to last.

There is no longer shame for me. I am . . .

[*Here the Venetian trumpet sounds—the Druses shout, his eye catches the expression of those about him, and, as the old dream comes back, he is again confident and inspired.*]

—Am I not Hakeem ? And ye would have crawled  
But yesterday within these impure courts  
Where now ye stand erect !—Not grand enough ?  
—What more could be conceded to such beasts  
As all of you, so sunk and base as you,  
Than a mere man ?—A man among such beasts  
Was miracle enough : yet him you doubt,  
Him you forsake, him fain would you destroy—  
With the Venetians at your gate, the Nuncio  
Thus—(see the baffled hypocrite !) and, best,  
The Prefect there !

*Druses.* No, Hakeem, ever thine !

*Nuncio.* He lies—and twice he lies—and thrice he lies !

Exalt thyself, Mahound ! Exalt thyself !

*Dja.* Druses ! we shall henceforth be far away—  
Out of mere mortal ken—above the cedars—  
But we shall see ye go, hear ye return,  
Repeopling the old solitudes,—through thee,  
My Khalil ! Thou art full of me—I fill

Thee full—my hands thus fill thee ! Yestereve,  
—Nay, but this morn, I deemed thee ignorant  
Of all to do, requiring word of mine  
To teach it : now, thou hast all gifts in one,  
With truth and purity go other gifts,  
All gifts come clustering to that. Go, lead  
My people home whate'er betide !

[*Turning to the Druses.*] Ye take  
This Khalil for my delegate ? To him  
Bow as to me ? He leads to Lebanon—  
Ye follow ?

*Druses.* We follow ! Now exalt thyself !

*Dja.* [*raises Loys.*] Then to thee, Loys ! How I  
wronged thee, Loys !

—Yet, wronged, no less thou shalt have full revenge,  
Fit for thy noble self, revenge—and thus.  
Thou, loaded with such wrongs, the princely soul,  
The first sword of Christ's sepulchre—thou shalt  
Guard Khalil and my Druses home again !  
Justice, no less—God's justice and no more,  
For those I leave !—to seeking this, devote  
Some few days out of thy Knight's brilliant life :  
And, this obtained them, leave their Lebanon,  
My Druses' blessing in thine ears—(they shall  
Bless thee with blessing sure to have its way)  
—One cedar-blossom in thy ducal cap,  
One thought of Anael in thy heart,—perchance,  
One thought of him who thus, to bid thee speed,  
His last word to the living speaks ! This done,



Resume thy course, and, first amid the first  
 In Europe, take my heart along with thee !  
 Go boldly, go serenely, go augustly—  
 What shall withstand thee then ?

[*He bends over ANAEL.*] And last to thee !

Ah, did I dream I was to have, this day,  
 Exalted thee ? A vain dream—hast thou not  
 Won greater exaltation ? What remains  
 But press to thee, exalt myself to thee ?  
 Thus I exalt myself, set free my soul !

[*He stabs himself; as he falls, supported by KHALIL and LOYS, the VENETIANS enter : the ADMIRAL advances.*]

*Admiral.* God and St. Mark for Venice ! Plant the  
 Lion !

[*At the clash of the planted standard, the Druses shout, and move tumultuously forward, LOYS drawing his sword.*]

*Dja.* [*leading them a few steps between KHALIL and LOYS.*]

On to the Mountain ! At the Mountain, Druses !

[*Dies.*]

END OF VOL. III.

PRINTED BY  
SPOTTISWOODE AND CO., NEW-STREET SQUARE  
LONDON

# WORKS BY ROBERT BROWNING.

## FERISHTAH'S FANCIES.

Third Edition. Fcp. 8vo. 5s.

## JOCOSERIA.

Second Edition. Fcp. 8vo. 5s.

## POETICAL WORKS OF ROBERT BROWNING.

6 vols. Crown 8vo. 30s.

### THE RING AND THE BOOK.

4 vols. Second Edition. Crown 8vo. 20s.

### DRAMATIC IDYLS.

FIRST SERIES. Second Edition. Fcp. 8vo. 5s. SECOND SERIES. Fcp. 8vo. 5s.

### LA SAISIAZ:

THE TWO POETS OF CROISIC.

Fcp. 8vo. 7s.

### THE AGAMEMNON OF ÆSCHYLUS.

Transcribed by ROBERT BROWNING.

Fcp. 8vo. 5s.

### PACCHIAROTTO,

AND HOW HE WORKED IN DISTEMPER.

With other Poems. Fcp. 8vo. 7s. 6d.

### THE INN ALBUM.

Fcp. 8vo. 7s.

### BALAUSTION'S ADVENTURE;

INCLUDING A TRANSCRIPT FROM EURIPIDES.

Third Edition. Fcp. 8vo. 5s.

### ARISTOPHANES' APOLOGY;

INCLUDING A TRANSCRIPT FROM EURIPIDES, BEING THE LAST  
ADVENTURE OF BALAUSTION.

Fcp. 8vo. 10s. 6d.

### FIFINE AT THE FAIR.

Fcp. 8vo. 5s.

### PRINCE HOHENSTIEL-SCHWANGAU, SAVIOUR OF SOCIETY.

Fcp. 8vo. 5s.

### A SELECTION FROM THE POETICAL WORKS OF ROBERT BROWNING.

FIRST SERIES. Eighth Edition. Crown 8vo. 7s. 6d.; gilt edges, 8s. 6d.

\*\*\* *New and Cheaper Edition.* Crown 8vo. 3s. 6d.

### A SELECTION FROM THE POETICAL WORKS OF ROBERT BROWNING.

SECOND SERIES. Third Edition. Crown 8vo. 7s. 6d.; gilt edges, 8s. 6d.

\*\*\* *New and Cheaper Edition.* Crown 8vo. 3s. 6d.

WORKS  
BY  
ELIZABETH BARRETT BROWNING.

---

POEMS BY ELIZABETH BARRETT BROWNING.

Fourteenth Edition. 5 vols. With Portrait. Crown 8vo. 30s.

---

AURORA LEIGH.

With Portrait. Nineteenth Edition. Crown 8vo. 7s. 6d. ;  
gilt edges, 8s. 6d.

---

A SELECTION FROM THE POETRY OF ELIZABETH  
BARRETT BROWNING.

With Portrait and Vignette.

FIRST SERIES. Thirteenth Edition. Crown 8vo. 7s. 6d. ;  
gilt edges, 8s. 6d.

\* \* *New and Cheaper Edition.* Crown 8vo. 3s. 6d.

---

A SELECTION FROM THE POETRY OF ELIZABETH  
BARRETT BROWNING.

SECOND SERIES. Third Edition. Crown 8vo. 7s. 6d. ;  
gilt edges, 8s. 6d.

\* \* *New and Cheaper Edition.* Crown 8vo. 3s. 6d.

---

London : SMITH, ELDER, & CO., 15 Waterloo Place.





PR            Browning, Robert  
4200           Poetical works  
E84  
v.3  
cop.2

PLEASE DO NOT REMOVE  
CARDS OR SLIPS FROM THIS POCKET

---

UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO LIBRARY

---

